

# THE WITNESS

written down by

JESSIE PLATTS

FOURTH EDITION

LONDON

[1920]

## FOREWORD

CAPTAIN JOHN CARRICK PLATTS (Jack) was born at Cambridge on May 26th, 1897. The elder son of the Rev. Charles Platts, formerly Fellow and junior Dean of Trinity College, he was educated at St. Faith's, Trumpington Road, Cambridge, and at Christ's Hospital, Horsham, Sussex. On the outbreak of the War in 1914 he was given a commission in the Suffolk Regiment and served with his battalion in France as Transport Officer, till March, 1917. He then entered the Indian Army, was gazetted to the 17th Cavalry, and went to Mesopotamia in October of that year, attached to the 10th Lancers.

He was killed in action at Alba Kemal on March 7th, 1920, aged 22. His Colonel writes of him: "One of the finest officers the regiment has ever known; he handled his men marvellously, and they would have done anything for him and followed him anywhere; he is most deeply regretted by all British and Indian ranks. On the day of his death, he led a most gallant charge over ground normally impassable for cavalry, and it was very largely owing to his magnificent personal courage and fine leadership, that the enemy were so severely handled that day."

LIEUTENANT EDGAR LOVELL FILMER PLATTS, the younger son of the Rev. C. Platts, was born at Cambridge on June 18th, 1899. Like his brother, he was educated at St. Faith's and Christ's Hospital.

He enlisted in the Royal Naval Division on May 1st, 1915, and was given a commission in the Royal Marine Light Infantry on September 5th of that year, and went to France in June, 1916. He was wounded in November at Beaumont Hamel, rejoined his regiment in France in January, 1917, and was killed in action at Gavrelle on April 28th, 1917, aged seventeen and a half years.

His Colonel says: "He trained under me at Plymouth and at once shewed himself a leader and a cheerful, uncomplaining sportsman. For one so young he shewed extraordinary strength of character. It was impossible to think of fear when he was about, and I am sure that he went like a hero, facing the enemy to the last."

"In writing to his mother the Chaplain speaks of him thus: In our own loss of a comrade always cheerful and keen on his duties, and one who lived as nobly as he died, we realise what his death must mean to you."

"Never the Spirit was born, the Spirit shall cease to be never, Never was time it was not, end and beginning are dreams; Birthless and deathless and changeless remaineth the Spirit for ever, Death hath not touched it at all, dead though the house of it seems."

These "messages," extracts of which only are given here, were recorded by me in 1918, my boy "Tiny," who had fallen in action on April 28th, 1917, controlling my hand. My elder son, the "Jack" referred to in the messages, joined him on March 7th, 1920, having been killed in action on that day.

It is utterly impossible to describe the strength of the tie existing between my sons and me, and between the boys themselves. We were always the truest comrades - the closest friends

- all through their short earth lives; and that strong affection, that deepest love, is enduring through all Eternity; nothing can ever break the bond that holds my boys and me.

But there was no sentimentality about it; they didn't write to me every day, nor send me last messages each time they went into action; there was no need, bless them, they knew I should understand. They had their duty to do and they expected me to do mine. Tiny considered Jack his greatest friend, and Jack's testimony to him on hearing of his passing is worth recording as shewing the attitude of the brothers.

"He was always a better chap than I, mother, dear old Tiny: unselfish, honest and loyal; a fine soldier, a gallant gentleman, and the whitest man I ever knew." Jack was in Mesopotamia when the messages for publication were finished, but I sent him a copy, so that he could share with Tiny and me. It has just been returned to me - with his kit.

As these messages are really "Tiny's book," perhaps a few recollections of him will be of interest. At the outbreak of the War he was still at school, and remained there most unwillingly till April, 1915, when with the headmaster's permission he left Christ's Hospital and joined the Public School Battalion of the Royal Naval Division on May 1st. On September 5th he was given a commission in the R.M.L.I., and gave his life for us on April 28th, 1917, just a boy of seventeen.

"Tiny," as we called him at home because he was so big, was a perfect joy in the house. Such a generous-hearted, laughter-loving soul, loving everybody and everybody loving him. He was full of quaint sayings and expressions, and, when he was a small boy, I often used to wonder who he really was! I will give an illustration of this.

One day in the Christmas holidays, when he was eight years old and Jack ten, I saw them looking into a shop that was full of toys and all sorts of nice things. Jack had his face glued to the window obviously wanting everything he saw; Tiny was standing with his back to it, hands in pockets, and as I came up to them I heard him say, "Turn your back on it, Jack, that's what I do."

Before he entered the Service I discussed with him the dangers that lay ahead, and pointed out that he was under no obligation to serve on account of his extreme youth, and this is his answer: "Mother, if a chap does his duty, other things come, and no one ever dies till his time's up, and then the prick of a pin may do it." "Boy," I thought, "who are you? And what am I to dare to hold you back?"... So I helped him all I could, as I had helped his brother the year before.

Both the boys were magnificent physical specimens tall, broad-shouldered, fine athletes and good sportsmen and the power to command, which they afterwards so strikingly shewed in the army, was very evident in their school-life. Their house-master told me that he looked on them as the best type of boy turned out by our Public School system.

They are two most gallant souls, Jack and Tiny, and I count it the very highest honour to have been allowed to call them sons.

JESSIE PLATTS. CAMBRIDGE

## PART I

### The Witness

JULY 3rd, 1918

“My name is Tiny and I was killed in battle when I was very young, and came here to bear witness to the truth for Christ. I was not a particularly good chap, but the work I had to do in the world was to be a witness, and so I had to go when the call came.

“My teacher is a kind man who was a preacher in the earth world, and is called Frank of Oxford. He says that your love has made it so much easier for me to accustom myself to the conditions of life in the spirit world, and that it is the way of salvation. He means that love is the goal.”

JULY 4th

“I have been allowed to keep much of my memory for things on the earth in order that I may be able to help you. You must not depend on me too much, you are not meant to do that, but on Christ, who will always come when you ask Him and will help you.”

JULY 5th

“You must not be afraid to write for us. You will be helped by Christ, who knows all the difficulties; pray to Him for strength and you will get it.”

JULY 6th

“My orderly, Harold Godfrey, who was killed before I was, met me when I came over and helped me a lot; he is an awfully decent chap, but he will still say ‘sir’ to me.

“It seems so queer, it is all so different from what my master at school said. He taught me to look at things like this: he said that we were not meant to know the conditions of life in the future world, and that we must have faith, and believe in the Bible. Well, he was jolly well mistaken, we are meant to know the way of things here, and he will have to unlearn an awful lot when he comes over.

“My major is here, and my colonel. My major’s name is Saunders and he was killed before I was, so he met me and helped me. When my colonel came I wasn’t awake, but I saw him afterwards when my guides took me to the place where he was lying asleep.

“The major told me he saw me killed and came to me at once, and said he was very proud of me because I had done my duty to the last.

“My love for you is just as real as it was on the earth, and so is my body, only I can use my powers differently. I don’t want food in the ordinary way, but you will know me when you come and we shall work together.”

JULY 7th

“We must ask permission of the great Master Christ before mentioning anything to

our people on earth.”

**JULY 8th**

“I want to make you understand the work you have to do for us in the spirit world. You must not worry in case it should be yourself that is writing; be very sure it is not. I have the power to speak to you and my message is to tell you to go on writing and pray hard to our great Master Christ.

“My work is on the battle-fields of France to help men when the moment of their death comes. And among the men in the spirit world who lived bad lives on earth. It is the work which is being given to all of us who did our duty and died for mankind. It is not meant that all should give up their lives in that way, but all must do their duty and love each other. You will work with me when you come and we shall be together. You will have to learn a great deal more about the possibilities of communication between your world and the spirit world.”

**JULY 10th**

“You must not be afraid when you are writing, because ‘that makes it difficult for me to talk to you. You will have much greater happiness in the future life because you did not funk your job here. It’s the selfish people who have so much to learn when they come over here and you were never that. All you did has helped me so much, and you needn’t feel you don’t deserve the praise, because you do, mother.”

**JULY 12th**

“My work is most awfully interesting now in a part of the spirit world where people are who never thought they would go on living.

“No one gives up his earthly life for nothing; we only change from one state of existence to another, and we are all going on with our evolution in the spirit world. Do not think we are not meant to know all about it on the earth. We are. Awful blunder on the part of the Churches not to have realised that and taught it.”

**JULY 15th**

“I am getting on well, and you will be so glad to hear that my teacher is pleased with me and says I am making much progress. I never go alone. My guide is sometimes an angel and sometimes another spirit learning to work like I am, but more advanced. Too dangerous to go alone, we must be protected from the devil and his wicked servants. Not allowed to go at all until the great Master Christ thinks we are ready. Then He tells our teachers and they tell us, so you see, it is all done in order and there is no muddle.”

**JULY 15th**

“Many men of my old regiment are here with me; most of them were killed when I was, but some of them at Beaumont Hamel when I was wounded in the hand. They were so glad to see me when I came over and I was just as glad to see them. They

were an awfully fine lot and most splendid chaps to fight with. They said they had been looking out for me because they knew I should be coming over before very long.

“They did not think I was only seventeen, they thought I was at least five and twenty, and were most awfully surprised when I told them I was only a boy; but they said I had behaved like a man, and so they thought I was one! It seemed so funny to hear these men say ‘sir’ to me just as they used to do on parade and on the battlefield.”

JULY 16th

“And many of them are developing very fast. It all depends on how much they knew of Christ and His love before they came here. You see, mother, it’s like this: creeds don’t matter a bit, but love to others does, and if a man has cared for someone more than himself that helps a lot, and he gets on much faster. (The War is coming to an end very quickly and all the evil will be thrust down underneath the earth, where we hope it will stay for a bit. It is ending sooner because of the enormous efforts being made by people in the spirit world who are co-operating with many important rulers on the earth.) They are not with me unless they had some glimmering of the truth of the reality of the spirit world. They couldn’t be, because they would be so out of it all, and so they must go to a place where they will be taught the great truth of survival after death, I mean a real active life - not a sleep. It is to my mother that I owe my ability to take up my work in the spirit world so easily. It makes all the difference to a chap if his mother has understood and helped him on the earth, because her love reaches him in the spirit world and it helps an awful lot.”

JULY 17th

“We can do a good deal to safeguard you here, but you must help yourself as well. Read a bit of the New Testament every day, especially the parts about the love of Christ. Keep your mind fixed on the fact that you are doing this work for the great Master Christ, and don’t let anyone persuade you to the contrary. You have been chosen to do the work, the power has been given you by Him, so don’t let anyone frighten you off it. You may be tempted to think it is the work of the devil, but be sure it is not. Pray all you can and then nothing can harm you. It is because the evil powers will be mad with rage about that time and will do all they can to injure you and other mediums. We are taking measures to safeguard you, so please be quite happy and go on writing. It makes such a difference when we can get a talk with our people sometimes, because, you know, mother, we are not saints or angels by any means, and won’t be for many a long day; but we are developing, and it is such a help to us that you can write.”

JULY 18th

“I still go to the battle-fields of France to help the poor chaps who have to die. I was helping one last night, and his last words were, ‘Thank God for Jesus Christ.’

“Then I helped another; he was older and a colonel of the Manchester Regiment. He died almost at once, and I took him to another place because he won’t rest so long.

He was an awfully brave man; I watched him for a long time before he was killed and noticed how well he managed his battalion. He kept cheering on his men and the last words I heard him say were: 'Come on, men, Manchesters never give up.' \* Then the bullet found him and his brave life was over. He wasn't an old man, and seemed as if he had worked hard. My work is very difficult sometimes, because when I go to those poor people I told you of before, they do so dreadfully want to come back to the earth. Sometimes it is because they are so sorry for something they did on the earth and they know they can't make up for it in exactly the same way as they could if they were sorry on earth. They will make up for it, but for some of them it will take a long, long time. We know what it is to feel unhappy too, although we have left the earth, and sometimes we ask our guides if we may speak with the great Master Christ. Then we feel ever so much happier, because He explains that those poor souls will not always be unhappy, but some day will come to this beautiful place where I am. Not unhappy for ourselves; it is on their account we suffer."

\* Extract from the Times, Of July 27th, 1918: "KILLED IN ACTION

ELSTOB. - Officially reported missing on March 21st, 1918, now officially reported killed on that day whilst in command of his gallant Battalion of 'Pals' - the heroes of Manchester Hill - LIEUTENANTCOLONEL WILFRITH ELSTOB, D.S.O., M.C., Manchester Regiment... aged 29. The Manchesters will defend Manchester Hill to the last. In death 'The Pals' were not divided."

JULY 19th

"Some of the men do so badly want to live to see the Germans beaten, and that makes it so hard when they are called to lay down their earthly lives. I try to help them as much as possible, and to make them feel sure that they will go on living after their bodies are killed, and sometimes I think they understand, though they can't hear me, or see me.

NOTE. - I had never heard of the Colonel of the Manchesters until Tiny mentioned him, and did not know his name until this notice In the issue of the Times, of nine days later, was pointed out to me. At first sight it seems a distinct discrepancy that the colonel was killed on March 21st, while Tiny speaks of him as only just recently killed on July 18th. This difficulty is more apparent than real. We have to remember that the measure of time "on the other side," whatever may be its nature, is by no means identical with that on our earth.

JESSIE PLATTS.

June 21st, 1921.

"It is awfully nice in the part of the spirit world where my friends are, because everyone loves everyone else. It does not matter who you were in this life, my friends are all sorts of people. My Master Christ comes to us sometimes and talks to us. We always stand when He comes, we don't kneel, because He told us that He was not God, but only a minister of His, and He does not like us to act towards Him as if He

were the Almighty Ruler of all the universe. We did not know this at first and we thought we ought to kneel, we know better now. He is such an awfully Holy Spirit, and so wonderfully kind and gentle. We worship Him in the way He would approve, I mean we love Him with all our hearts and minds. So glad when He comes because He cheers us up so, and if we are in any difficulty about our work He soon puts it right for us. We do not often see Him, because He has so much work to do on your earth just now; He really is working there, you know, mother, and not in a spiritual sense only. He is really on the earth as He was 2,000 years ago, and we think He will show Himself to some people before very long. Not allowed to say more than that, but you will remember, mother, and perhaps you'll be allowed to recognise Him. Wouldn't you be glad! And then perhaps you could tell Him how much you loved me and how you are trying to work for Him. I know He would listen and be so pleased to hear about me, because, you see, mother, He was once a man just like all of us, and He hasn't forgotten what a home and a mother were like. It is that which makes my life here so happy, the exceeding great love of Christ, which manifests itself to all of us who were not ashamed to love Him a bit on the earth, though we didn't talk much about it."

JULY 20th

"We know that the War will come to an end before very long.

"My work now takes me to a part of the spirit world where those stay for a time who were not ready to give up their lives when the time came, and I have to try to tell them that they were wanted in the spirit world. We are so miserable sometimes, because of those poor souls who are not ready to come to my part of the spirit world, but we know that their unhappiness is the best thing for them, and that they will come. We are so happy when one of these men escapes from his surroundings and comes to us. One came the other day, worn out with the struggle, but we took him to a place where he will have a good long rest under most beautiful conditions, and when he wakes up we shall be ready to welcome him here and help him all we can. He had lived an utterly selfish life on earth, and even his death in battle wasn't enough to do away with the consequences of his selfishness. It helped, of course, but it wasn't enough, and so he had to go to a place to learn what a wicked thing it was to be utterly indifferent to anyone's pleasure but his own.

"Sometimes I go to those who knew a little about Christ, but who utterly disbelieved in survival after death. They are the hardest to deal with, because they will persist in thinking that it is only a dream, and that they will wake up soon in their old homes on the earth.

"Now I will tell you something of my life. We are all so happy here, and we have all sorts of wonderful trees and flowers, birds, rivers, and lakes. Sometimes I go on the river with Raymond and Chris and Stephen. They are all such nice chaps and we have long talks about the big things of life here, and on your plane. We often go to a wonderful place called the 'Mountain of Comfort,' and there we just lie and watch

the stars and the glorious flashing lights from other worlds. Not allowed to go very far away without our guides, because we are not developed enough to safeguard ourselves entirely alone. You know, mother, we get about in a different way to what we did on the earth. We have not any trains or motorbuses, but we get along by ourselves, just as if we had a dynamo inside us and were worked by that. Sometimes I go to Egypt, because they tell me here that you once lived in Egypt and so did I and Jack, but not Molly, she seems to have come into our lives at a much later date....

“The Germans are going to be awfully badly beaten; it will be the beginning of a new life for the German people, because they have suffered much from the autocratic Prussian Junkers.”

JULY 21st

“I go to my work nearly every day with a friend of mine named Raymond; he was killed earlier in the War than I was, so he knows more about life here, and he is such a splendid comrade. We go to the very saddest places first, because we like to help them as often as we can. Some of them have been in their present state for a long time and we wish we could shorten their training, but that is not allowed. We can only help them by telling them to go on trying, and that the time will come when they will escape and come to my part of the spirit world. We also go to those people who have to learn about the wonderful love of Christ for every soul on our plane and on yours. We just tell them over and over again that He really and truly cares for every single individual soul. We are so happy when one of them says, ‘Yes, I believe, will you pray to Him for me that I may get away from this place of waiting?’ And we say, ‘Of course we will, but you must pray yourself as well,’ and then we teach them a very short prayer; it is just this: ‘O Master Christ, will you please remember me, and help me to absolution?’ All that I tell you is quite true, and you must believe it, please, mother.”

JULY 22nd

I am very busy just now, because of the furious fighting that is going on. We are doing all we can for those who have to give up their earthly lives for the cause of righteousness. We do not find many who are really willing to lay down their lives for others, but now and then we do, and then we are awfully pleased because we know that that man will make such a good start in my part of the spirit world.

“I think you will see Jack before very long, and I shall be with him as much as I can and do all that I can for him. He was my best pal at school and all my life, dear old chap. You see, mother, we don’t forget anyone whom we have really cared for, and I remember so much of my life on the earth. I have such awfully happy times here with my friends. Sometimes we go on the river and sometimes we fish in the lake. We don’t hurt anything, you know, we just let the fish take hold of our lines, and then we free them at once. There are many different sorts of places, you know, mother, even where I am. There is a part where little children are, who died as

babies, and we play with them and make much merriment with them. Do you remember I was fond of saying, 'Let us make merry '? Well, I'm still the same, and they tell me here that I am known as the man with the cheerful grin! You see, we all keep our characteristics, and though it may sound funny to hear me described like that, it isn't really, and is another proof that we do not change when we come over here. Well, I must go on about the babies. They are awfully jolly kids and are loved and cared for here far more than they could have been on the earth plane, even if they all had mothers like you, which some of them hadn't. They go to school and learn all sorts of interesting things about life here and on the earth too. It is necessary for them to have a certain knowledge of things on the earth because they will have to be helpers to others later on who did not die so young, and they could not do the work unless they had some knowledge of earth life and conditions. Sometimes I go to that part where people are who will soon be going on; that means those who have advanced beyond my stage of development; and who are fit for the next sphere, You see, mother, it is all progress here and all development. These people are so beautiful and full of the love of Christ. One of them came up to me and said he had known you many years ago. He was not a specially good man on the earth, but he had worked through, and now he was ready to go on. He said he was very much older than you, but that he had always a warm corner in his heart for you and hadn't forgotten you at all. His name was Edward Willis and he said that perhaps you may remember him and his old father, who came over here first. He was not so ready for development as his son, but he is coming along quite well.

"I will tell you now of another part where the people go who were faithful to the highest that they knew; it may not have been a very high ideal really, but their faithfulness to what was the best they were capable of, brought them here. They are very happy spirits, but still have much to learn. You see, they only developed one side of their nature, and there is still a good deal for them to develop on the spiritual side.

"It's all so awfully interesting, and so different to what the ordinary parson teaches on Sundays! We often wonder, Raymond and I and Chris and Stephen, why men are still so hidebound with conventional Christianity. It is not the real thing at all, and it means so much unlearning when they come over here."

JULY 23rd

"At first it was very difficult for me to do my work here because I had to learn to use my powers of all sorts; but I can do it much better now. My work is among all those who are learning about the truth of the spirit world, and many of them are so surprised to find how natural it all is.

"Many thought that when you died you became something with wings all at once, and when they came over here and found we were just ordinary men they were awfully astonished. We teach them many things, and explain to them very carefully indeed, that all persons, however good they may have been on the earth, would have

to pass through a form of probation in the spirit world so as to make them more fit to do the special bit of work allotted to them. Not punishment at all, but just a kind of apprenticeship, and all have to go through it. With some people the time is very short, with others it is longer; it all depends on how much they were capable, when they were on the earth, of appreciating spiritual things. You would be awfully surprised if you could see some of the souls who come to my part of the spirit world. You would not think they were worthy at all. From the earthly point of view they are not, but we over here see so much more clearly, and we know that often what looks like something wrong on the earth, is quite a beautiful action, when looked at from this side.

“We are doing much work among those souls who never had the chance of hearing about the Master Christ except to swear, and often go to them because we are so very anxious to help them all we can. You see, mother, we are really spiritual teachers, and we have to learn a great deal ourselves before we can teach others. When I first came over I didn’t think I should be able to do the work at all, because I was only a boy, and didn’t know much myself, but my teacher shewed me so much and took so much trouble to help me, that I soon began to be of a little use; and it is much easier now, though I have still a great deal to learn.

“We are taught every day by one or other of our teachers in a kind of large lecture hall with windows all down one side. We do not sit at desks like an earth school, but stand about in groups, and the teacher comes first to one group, and then to another. We do not have any note-books, but collect the information with our mental bodies and pass it on to our spiritual bodies and learn in that way. I’m afraid it must sound a bit like a fairy tale but that’s how it is done, mother, so please be sure and write it down.”

(“I can follow you, darling.”)

“Can you really, mother? If you can, it means you have learnt a big part of the truth of life here, and you will be of more use to us than ever if you have really grasped what I am telling you. Some of our teachers are men, like my special teacher, Frank of Oxford, and some of them are much higher spirits, and some are very great masters who come to us from much higher worlds, and who are sent by the Almighty God Himself. They are so glorious to look at we can hardly bear the light they shed wherever they go but they know we can’t and they are so wonderfully kind and gentle to us. One of them took me on a journey to a very distant part of the spiritual world, and shewed me most wonderful things. I can’t explain even to you, mother, but it filled me with a most wonderful sense of happiness and I just longed to shew it all to you and dear old Jack. He would be so keen on it all and it would be so nice to have you both, but the time will come some day when we shall be together and work together.”

(“Don’t go on too far before Jack and I come.”)

“No, mother, there is not the slightest fear of that. When you come I shall meet you and bring you to my part of the spirit world, and you will work with me after you have been trained a little, and we shall both wait for Jack. Molly will come to us, but I think her training will take longer. But never mind; she will come sometime.”

JULY 24th

“We are having much instruction at the moment from one of the great masters from the higher spheres. He is so splendid to look at and all sorts of glorious colours play round about him, and his clothes are such a dazzling white. He talks to us a good deal about the duty of service, and tells us that it is the highest possible plane of being, that there is nothing to compare with the happiness of serving others entirely for the sake of serving; without the least thought of profit to ourselves. We find it rather difficult, but he lets us ask him questions, and explains the difficulties to us. The difficulties come through our being still very undeveloped on the spiritual side, because we do not quite realize that service is only another name for love; we have still to learn to love as the Master Christ loves, and that will take us a long time. We do love everyone here, of course, but not with the overwhelming power that Christ does.

“We are also taught to pray, and that is difficult for us too, because our ideas of prayer are so very different to those of this great spirit from the higher worlds. He tries to make us realize that prayer is really thought, and no, an asking for certain things either for ourselves or for others, and we do not quite grasp the significance of the teaching. You see, mother, we are still men, not angels, and have a good many of the difficulties to contend with that we had on the earth. I mean, the evil powers are still able to tempt us to do and think the things that are wrong, only we have much more strength to resist them. AH the same we have to be very watchful, and to ask for strength to be given us. That is where mothers can help their children so much by praying for them on earth. You don't know, mother, what an enormous help you have been to me here, and to others as well, even those who never knew you in the earth life. They are more thankful than they can possibly express when a prayer reaches them. They always know, and sometimes even who is praying for them. I always know when you are - it makes me feel so extraordinarily happy, and strong to do my work for the Master Christ.

“I am in France just now; the men are dying such heroic deaths, and so many of them will come to my part of the spirit world after they have rested a little. You see, mother, we know here that the Germans are beaten and our thoughts influence the men on the earth, and put new courage into them. When I go to those who have to give up their lives, I try all I possibly can to make them realize that their deaths are just so many victories, gained for Christ, and that nothing can kill their real selves, only their earthly bodies. Sometimes I'm sure they believe before they are killed, because their faces look so happy afterwards. And I always go with them to the place where they will rest for a little while. I shall be on the look-out for them when it is

over, and ready to make them welcome here.”

JULY 25th

“We are watching you now with the greatest interest. We think that the time is coming when you will be of the very greatest service to us here. We know that you are doing the work with the highest motives, and that makes all the difference to our messages. We are not able to get through properly if the medium is not a humble worker for Christ, because her mental attitude affects us, and makes it almost impossible to send correct messages.

“I told you yesterday that we were being taught to pray and that service to others was the very highest ideal for mankind. We are still having the same teaching by that wonderful spirit from the higher worlds. He tells us so much about the wonderful love of the Almighty God for all creation, and of the patience and wisdom with which he guides the destinies of all the worlds. We do not understand it all yet, but he tells us many times and we shall understand it presently. He tells us that our Master Christ was sent to the world of matter, 2,000 years ago, to manifest to the people of that time the majesty of the great God Himself. He was sent to shew them what a wonderful thing the love of God was. He was not God Himself, but the highest manifestation of Him that had yet appeared on the earth. We drink in all this great spirit tells us with the utmost reverence, and know that he is telling us the truth. He said that there had been many manifestations of the great Almighty God before the time of Christ, but none of them had the most tremendous power that He had, or gave such profoundly spiritual teaching. He was incarnate - God and man - in a way, but not in the way the Church has taught it. He was God in the sense of being the manifestation of God, and Man because He took possession of the body of Jesus, the real son of Mary and Joseph. The story of the Incarnation, as has been handed down from the time of the first Christians, is a mistaken way of expressing a wonderful truth. The great Master Christ was on the earth for a much longer time than people think. We all know it here, and we hope that some day it will be known on your plane. We are not allowed to say any more than that just now, but we may tell you so much of the real truth. We are so anxious to learn all we can about Him and His work for the Almighty God, because we like to feel that He once knew all our difficulties and what it was to be unhappy. You see, mother, many, many thousands of years ago He was just an ordinary man, and with all a man's temptations, and it does help us all so much. And there is another thing: He is now the mightiest and holiest spirit in all the worlds; the perfect example and ideal for every one of us.

“What He has become we may also become, only, of course, it will take a very long time. We talk about it, sometimes, my friend Raymond and I, and we almost shudder when we think of the mighty possibility. We don't shudder with fear, mother, you know, it is only that we feel our utter unworthiness. And then we say to each other, ‘Well, it only means that we must try to do our work better than ever before, and pray much harder, and love much more.’”

JULY 26th

“Still being taught by the great spirit I mentioned before. He tells us much of the power of prayer and that it influences many more people than those on your plane. It can reach all those in the spirit world where I am, and even in the dark places where poor souls are struggling to free themselves, and come to my glorious place of love and work and progress. It reaches right up to the very highest point of evolution, right up to the great Almighty God Himself. He tells us that my Master Christ is one way by which we can approach that awfully wonderful Being Whom we call the Almighty God; and that through Him we are allowed to really speak with God. You know, mother, how very many of your prayers on the earth plane end like this ‘Through Jesus Christ our Lord,’ well, we don’t end ours quite like that, because that ending makes it look as if Jesus Christ was one person, which he is not, but we say ‘through the mediation of our great Master, the Christ of our universe.’ You see the difference, don’t you, mother? It puts an entirely different meaning, doesn’t it, and the right one. This great spirit tells us that Jesus is with them in the higher worlds and that he will some day be just such another glorious being as our Master Christ, but not yet. This wonderful teaching is being told you, mother, that you may help others to believe in it. We know that you have grasped it, and we earnestly hope that you may have the strength and courage to pass it on to others. We know that it will shake the very foundations of belief in Christianity, but that is just what it is intended to do. No thoughtful man or woman could possibly believe the Christian doctrine as taught by the great majority of parsons to-day. There are some who have begun to open the eyes of their intelligence, and who are ready to receive the truths of the spirit life, and those people are much appreciated by us. Remember that I have been allowed to tell you all this for special reasons. I know it may not sound like a boy talking, but it really is Tiny, you know, mother, so I just Pass on the message to you as it is given to me. Our teacher tells us much of the patience of God, we find that awfully comforting to us, because sometimes we should so like to see the results of our work among the unhappy people here a bit quicker than we do - on their account. He also tells us that God can really feel unhappy when men so persistently go on doing the things they shouldn’t; he says that even God does not make people good without any effort on their part, because that would destroy His marvellous plans for the evolution of all the inhabitants of all the worlds, and they would not learn the great lessons of self-control and patience, and so would never be able to help others. This great spirit was once a man too, he said and yet remembers a good deal of his earth life. He told us that his home was in Persia many thousands of years ago, and that he was a priest there, and used to pray to the sun. Not that he meant that he actually said his prayers to that fiery ball of gas by itself, but, only because at that time it stood for the manifestation of God. It was the symbol of Light. And, mother, you know in our Bible there is a text which says ‘the Sun of Righteousness’? Well, that means just the same thing.”

JULY 27th

“He tells us much of the wisdom of God and how every little thing works according to His plan for it; that all our actions are controlled by God, only we have the power of free-will, so that we are not just machines. That the great Almighty God works out His plans for the evolution of the earth universe in many ways. Sometimes what looks like a most disastrous thing for the person concerned, is really a blessing in disguise.

“God does not punish people as the churches have said that He does. He can't punish, because He is not capable of feeling resentment against any of His creatures. But He does allow the consequence of our actions to bear fruit, sometimes in your world, and sometimes in the spirit world; there is no escape from that, and it is one of the most important truths of spirit life. God knows how difficult it is for us to master our lower natures, and He is very, very patient with us. We are taught that every effort we make is noticed by Him and remembered, and how He works through His ministers both here and in your world. His ministers are not always clergymen on your plane, but all sorts of people, even little children sometimes.

“God loves many people who do not love Him or believe in Him at present; He knows that the time will come when all people will love Him, and that will mean untold peace and happiness for all the nations. Our teacher always says a prayer before he begins his lecture to us, and the prayer is just this, ‘O most mighty Ruler of all the worlds, have compassion on these Thy servants, and, in Thy most almighty wisdom, grant them understanding.’ You see, mother, it is quite a short prayer, but means an awful lot.”

JULY 28th

“We are being taught now by another great spirit from the higher worlds; his work is usually among people on another planet, but he has been ordered to come for a time, to help all of us whose work is among the dark places of the spirit world. He tells us that all we are doing now was done by him and other great spirits on another planet, because, you know, mother, there are people living on other planets, and some of them are much farther on than you are on the earth, and some of them are very much more backward. He tells us that many thousands of years ago he was one of those unhappy people, and he says we have no idea of their longing to get away to something higher and better. He says he used to feel as if the time would never come for his escape; so he can sympathise with us so much when we feel we would do anything to shorten the time for them. This great spirit is wonderful to look at. He is very tall, with glorious flashing eyes, and his clothes are not white like those of our other great spirit teacher, but blue, like the sky in summer, and when he speaks his voice is like an organ.

“He tells us that our work is one of the most difficult things to do in the spirit world; and that we want all the strength that he can give us, and all the love that Christ can;

strength for ourselves that we may be kept free of any evil influence, and love to the poor souls struggling to be free.

“He says he has been specially sent to us just now because of the vast numbers of really wicked people who are coming over from the German Armies and from the Bolsheviks in Russia. So many of these men are coming over with their souls simply black with hate, and they will be very, very difficult for us to influence.

“Do you know, mother, I saw that poor soul Nicholas Romanoff, the other day, and was allowed to speak to him. My guides took me to the place where he is, and where he will have to stay for a bit. It isn't a very unhappy place, but it isn't a beautiful place like my home here, and that poor soul will have to stay there for some time. My guides told me he had much to learn, but that he had glimmerings of spiritual things, and so they hope he won't be so very long where he is now; I felt so awfully sorry for him, mother, he seemed so broken-hearted and so full of remorse for his failure to do his duty. That is his punishment, mother, and he will have to work through it before he comes to my part. We shall help him all we can, and we know he will be helped by our Master Christ. The great spirit tells us that none of the souls in the sad places will be unhappy always; it is part of the plans of the Almighty God that every single soul should one day be just such another glorious being as our Master Christ.

“He tells us that we must not be impatient to see the result of our work; he says he had to work for a very long time before he was allowed to see the result of his labours. When he first began he said he felt absolutely unworthy because he had been such a bad man, but our great Master told him to have no fear, but to do the work humbly and reverently as a servant of the Almighty God. After a time he was able to help them quite well, and he thought it helped them when he told them what an evil life he had led.”

JULY 29th

“All that I have told you of my life and teaching here is absolutely true, mother.”

JULY 30th

“Still being taught by that great spirit I told you of on Sunday.

“He tells us much of the blessings that are in store for all the poor souls who are still held back by their lower nature. We know it, of course, but it does cheer us up to hear him tell us with that most magnificent voice of his; it really is like an organ, mother, and we love to listen to him.

“He told us yesterday that he once knew a man on the earth plane who had been most dreadfully wicked while he was still in the physical body. When he passed over and came to the spirit world he utterly refused to believe he was dead, and so he was permitted to return to the earth for a time where he haunted his old home and many of his old evil companions. After a bit he began to feel something within him as if he

were trying to get above his old life. At once his guide (who had never left him, though he was so wicked) took him to a part of the spirit world, a very sad part, where he would have to work out his salvation. He suffered most awfully for a time, but the spark of right feeling which had stirred within him when he came back to the earth, and which of course must have been always in him, grew bigger and bigger, and at last he was able to escape from that terribly sad place and go to one not quite so sad. After more training and much hard experience, he got away altogether from the sad places and came to my beautiful part. Then, our teacher told us, he became a most wonderful spirit, full of the love of Christ, and tenderness for sinners. That helped us a lot; we do like to be told that everyone, no matter how evil he may have been, will ultimately become a glorious spirit, like so many we see here.

“We are learning a great deal, too, from those awfully clever scientists like Galileo, and Giordano Bruno, and Roger Bacon, and some modern ones like Faraday and Huxley. Most of them were not much more than names to me when I was on the earth, but it is awfully interesting to meet them here and talk to them. The man called Bruno said he had lived in Italy, and that he had been burnt at the stake. He is a wonderful spirit and had gone on a long way, but had come back to help in the training of souls. He is watching the progress of the War very eagerly, and in his much more advanced state of development than ours can see things so much more clearly.

“We do not have any lessons from men who were great theologians on earth, because so many of them laid so much stress on dogmas and creeds, and always going to church morning and evening. Well, mother, you know, when they came over here, they found it was as different as possible from anything they had taught, and sometimes terrified, people, into believing. There is no fear in the real Christianity, neither dogmas nor creeds are of the least real importance. The only thing that counts is love. If a man loves his fellow men it doesn't matter whether he goes to church or not; he probably would go, but there is no penalty attached if he doesn't. Some of these clergymen who are in my part are awfully kind men. My teacher is one of them, and there is another called Charles Kingsley; he is quite beautiful to look at even at this stage of his development. He talks to me sometimes and tells me interesting things about birds and animals. My guides tell me he was a famous man when he lived on the earth, and loved by many people. We often talk to another parson named Wilberforce, he hadn't been over very long and his father is here too, but we don't often see him because he is working a good deal on your plane just now. This Wilberforce was a bishop once, but his son was an archdeacon. He is very kind and talks to us a good deal. He knows we are only boys, at least I am, and have so much to learn.”

JULY 31 st

“Still much teaching from great spirits from the higher worlds. The special one who is lecturing to us just now is a most glorious being, and just radiates glory wherever

he goes. He has been sent to tell us a little of the surpassing splendour of those higher worlds. We are not ready to be told very much, but our Master Christ considered us advanced enough for a little teaching, so He asked the great Almighty God if a teacher might be sent to us. He tells us about the glories of those higher spheres in very simple easy language, so I will try to explain it to you, mother, but it isn't very easy.

“First of all he says that everybody there has once passed through a period of probation in a physical body, either on your earth or some other planet, and that they all had to learn the same lessons that you and I are learning now. That means, they were men like us once, but of course a very long time ago. He said that some of them were alive on the earth when the lost continent Atlantis was destroyed by water. I didn't know that there ever had been such a continent and it was awfully interesting to hear him tell us of the conditions of life on the earth then. It must have been a queer place, but all the same it had certain advantages which we don't possess now. He told us that the nation was ruled by one of the mighty spirits from the higher worlds, who was a manifestation of the great Almighty God and that he governed just like an earthly king, and that there were wars just like there are now. We listen with all our ears, it is so strange and interesting to us. He tells us that the higher spheres are full of harmony. Nothing worries there, and the evil forces have no power over people there. He says that there are temples of a kind there, but not like cathedrals or churches on the earth plane. They are all of different colours, for different ways of approaching the great Almighty God. You're taking it down all right, mother, but some of it is hard to explain. Some of the temples, he said, were full of the most beautiful music you could imagine, and all of them have the most glorious colours in them. He tells us of the wonderful peace there is in those higher spheres. And yet, there is plenty to do, for all are still working for and serving God. Of course, we know that we shall not get there for ever so long, but it cheers us up to be told a little of what God has in store for every single soul in the whole universe - when that soul is ready.

“Now I will tell you something about my ordinary life here. We have certain times for our training and for our work. Time isn't quite the same thing as on your plane; it's all 'to-day' so to speak. We often go to lovely woods and mountains, and meet all sorts of interesting people and hear and see interesting things. Sometimes I go with Chris and Raymond and Stephen to a part called the City Beautiful. It is lovely there; glorious sunshine and everybody loving everybody else. We often go to other countries, but we don't stay very long. We are always anxious to get back to our friends here. We think that some of us may be given work on the earth plane soon, but I don't think I shall be one of them. My work among the poor souls in the dark places interests me so much. But of course, if the Master Christ wished me to give that up and to take on other work I should obey cheerfully. One of the things here that is so awfully nice is the help that others are willing to give you, in every possible way.”

## AUGUST 1st

“We are still learning from that wonderful spirit who told us all about Atlantis yesterday. We are so keen to hear all he can tell us about those wonderfully beautiful spheres. You see, mother, we are still only men, and we like to; hear about the beautiful colours and the music and the lights. We are not yet advanced enough only to want such abstract things as love, and peace, and security from evil. Of course we want those too, but the other things attract us very much. I suppose it is because we can understand them better, as in a dim way we saw them and heard them on the earth. However, we shall develop in time. He told us that all the people in the higher worlds are filled with the most perfect love to God, and their fellow creatures. They were not always in that state, but had to come to it by degrees, and it took thousands and thousands of years before they reached the present point of their evolution. It rather staggers one at first, doesn't it, to think of such a length of time, but over here you know, mother, it doesn't seem so long. We count time differently, but even to us we know what waiting means. Some of these people had been very good and some very wicked when they were on the earth, but they have all worked through, and reached that gloriously happy place. You see, mother, you can't be quite happy in the spirit life until you have advanced much further than I have, because we are not yet capable of realizing that what looks like unhappiness is really the wise, gentle training that people need, to fit them for the higher spheres. Will you try and tell people this, mother? It applies to your plane as well as to others. People don't go straight to those higher worlds when they die, even the very, very best that ever lived; they all pass through a period of training first on a lower plane. It would be utterly impossible unless they were trained first. They would neither understand nor appreciate the conditions of life there.”

## AUGUST 2nd

“We learn from that great spirit that all our actions have their inevitable consequences, whether they be good or evil. We make our own heaven and our own hell, there is no question of reward or punishment. Whatever our condition may be in the next life, we have earned it by our life on earth. We want you to tell people that, mother, whenever you can, so that the awful idea that God punishes can be done away with. In the first place it is utterly illogical. How can an all-wise Being be angry with creatures so infinitely below Him in development? In the second - it is an utterly false teaching. It has been responsible for much that is mistaken on the earth and on our plane. It has made the great truth of the overwhelming love of the Almighty God for all His creatures, almost impossible of acceptance. The two aspects contradict each other. We are taught much about this, because this great spirit has little children so much in his mind, and he says it is a most wicked thing to teach them to be afraid of God. God is everybody's friend and no one's judge - we judge ourselves by our actions.

“We are taught much about the duty of thankfulness. That was rather a new idea to

us. We did not know how happy it makes God when people appreciate beautiful surroundings, and music, and all the comforts of earth life. It does not matter if we have earned them by our own exertions, because all our actions are controlled by God - in conjunction with our free-will - so in a sense He gives them to us. God delights in the happiness of His creatures. We never thought He could bother about a thing like that, but He does, mother, and will you please remember that? When people are not happy it saddens Him, and very often it's their own fault and always it's the efforts of the evil forces; even when physical suffering is the cause - and very hard to bear."

AUGUST 3rd

"We are having a good deal of teaching now from that clever man, Roger Bacon. He lived on your plane a long time ago, but he knew a great deal then about the truth of the spirit life and so he is being brought back to teach us. He is very wonderful, because he has gained so much in spirituality, and yet he has not lost his fun, and he loves to crack jokes with us. We are also learning from another great man of science named Newton. I knew a good deal about him before I came over, so it did not seem so strange to meet him, but it was awfully interesting to hear him talk about Trinity Chapel. He knows his statue is there, and I told him I used to see it every Sunday when I went to chapel with you. And do you know, mother, he said that he often goes to chapel now, especially to the service for the cadets, and that he was there when the funeral service was held for Montagu Butler. I think you will like to know that. Well, then, sometimes we go to lectures by a man called Michael Foster. He spoke to me one day, and said he had known you a little, many years ago. He is very kind, and tells us a lot about medicine, and microbes - and the way to destroy them. We learn those things in order that we may be able to understand the difficulties of doctors when they are trying to fight disease on your plane, and be able to help them with our thoughts. We do not want medical knowledge for ourselves, of course, as our present bodies are freed from disease, but so that we can help others."

AUGUST 4th

"I am often with Raymond, and Chris, and Stephen, and sometimes with my great friend at school, a chap called Fergusson. He was awfully glad to see me when I came over, and said he had been looking out for me for a long time. He was killed quite early in the War, and came to my part of the spirit world almost at once. He was an awfully nice chap at school, and he is getting on splendidly here. We go sometimes to a kind of large park and there we have cricket matches and games, and sports, just like we used to do on the earth. We enjoy it so much, especially sometimes when the great Master Christ has time to come and watch us. We simply love it when He comes; He makes us all feel as if we must do our very best to win whatever game we are playing; but we don't mind a bit if we lose, we never get wild or ratty if things go wrong.

"There is another thing we do sometimes and that is we take lessons in moving

through space. You know, you really have to learn how to move and it is quite difficult at first. Of course, it is an absurd idea that people have wings directly they die, I haven't seen anyone with wings yet, not even the great spirits from the lofty spheres; but it is true that we go through space by ourselves, and it may seem a little like flying, but it isn't really. It is more like walking without moving your legs, if you can understand that."

("I have often dreamed I was moving like that.")

"Have you, mother? Well, do you know what that means?" ("No.")

"Well, it means that you were out of your body then and over here!"

("It was often mixed up with impossible things.")

"That doesn't matter; you must have been here, though your dream may have been rubbish.

"Do you know, mother, you came over last night and I talked to you for quite a long time and you told me all about Molly and Jack and Mrs. Roy. It was just lovely for me and I was sorry when you had to go."

("I dreamed last night that I saw you and spoke to you but it was so mixed up!")

"Yes, mother, but the fact remains that you did see me and speak to me. You will remember before very long, and that is one of the reasons why we are so anxious for you to remember, because then you will have the evidence of your own eyes and ears. We have known for some time that that power would be given to you as well as the automatic writing, but the Master Christ does not wish you to develop too quickly."

AUGUST 4th

"Could you spare a few minutes to get my message through? All right. It's only to say that I have found two more friends, my old master at school, named Boardman, and Jack Bull. They are not in my part, but they are not very far away and will come very soon. Poor Jack Bull was awfully glad to see me, he hasn't quite fitted in with spirit life yet, so he isn't as happy as he will be later on. He said it cheered him awfully to see my well-known grin! Major Boardman is getting on awfully well; he was a fine chap and a colonel when he was killed. Well, that's all, mother, but I thought you would like to know that."

AUGUST 5th

"We did bombard you last evening, didn't we? And weren't you glad the king came? \* He has known you for a long time, he says, and he doesn't mean on your earth now, he means ever so many hundreds of years ago. He said that you were of great service to him when he was in most terrible danger, and, though he knew nothing of it when he was king on your earth, he has remembered it since he came to the spirit world. Now, mother, you're not to think I am repeating what is in your mind, you're not,

and I'm just telling you the absolute truth. The king told me he wasn't a king then, and wasn't living in England, but in a hot country, and that I was there too, and Jack, but we were not brothers. I thought that sounded awfully queer, but I didn't interrupt, of course, and he said, 'No, you were not brothers then, but you were very great friends,' and then he said - and this really did make me gasp: 'Your mother was then your elder sister, and we were all working and training together. When you came over I remembered you at once, and knew you for the same man with whom I had once talked on the banks of the Nile.' Isn't it wonderful, mother? and so awfully interesting, only it does make me want you and Jack over here so much so that we can all be together again. I asked the king if he could remember any details of our life in those days and he said, 'Not very much, but it is coming back to me gradually, and in time you will remember too.' Won't that be splendid? and what a lot I shall have to tell you then. The king told me that Molly was not with us then, though he knows she is my sister now. When he had finished talking to me I hurried off to find my teacher, Frank of Oxford, and told him about it, because it was really startling, you know, mother, and he said the king was quite right, and some day I should be told much more, but the time had not come yet. Raymond was awfully interested and so were Chris and Stephen; it was all quite new to them, but we talked it over a long time, and decided that we liked the idea and hoped we should be allowed to hear more about it soon.

\* H.M. King Edward VII. - Jessie PLATTS.

"It's very difficult now in the sad places, and the Master Christ has given me a very special guide besides my own guide who is always with me. This special guide is a glorious spirit, not from the very highest worlds, but from a much more advanced plane than mine. His name is Michael, and he was killed in battle like I was, only a long time ago. He said he was not an Englishman when he last lived on earth - but a Greek - and he has not yet forgotten his home and Country. He is a most tremendous help to me in my work. He always stands between me and the evil powers, so that they shall not hurt me, and I am so grateful for his help. The evil forces are desperately strong, you know, mother, and they hate us trying to help those poor souls in the dark places. One of them did all he could to prevent me speaking to a poor soul yesterday; he even hurled himself against me and tried to throw me down, but my guides stood close up to me and he couldn't touch me. I wasn't a bit afraid, you know, mother, only just angry, and should like to have given him a crack on the head - but of course we are not allowed to do that! I could only look at him and tell him he could have no power over me, and that I should go on doing my work in spite of him, and then he just snarled at me, and went off. My guides told me that I had behaved awfully well, and that they would tell the Master Christ that I was not afraid. Of course, I expect their presence put more strength into me, but I really wasn't frightened, mother, and though you might think it irreverent, or profane, I really wanted to laugh, because his rage made him look so awfully funny!

AUGUST 6th

“Are you there, Tiny?”

“Yes, rather, mother. You don’t catch me staying away for long when I can talk to you like this. You don’t know how splendid it is to be able to come and really have conversations with you. When I come I always take a friend and tell him what I am going to do, and sometimes he tries to get into touch with his people, but no one has the power to write like you have, mother. It is so easy for me to talk to you and the others here say that you are developing into a first-class medium.

“We are still being taught by that great spirit from the very high plane - but not very much now - as we are so busy with our work. My teacher, Frank of Oxford, told me that the king was quite right when he told me he had known you and me and Jack before, and he said that my memory of my past lives will come back soon, and that I shall be allowed to tell you because, mother, we have always been together and shall go on being together. I’m not bothering about what relation you really are to me; it’s quite enough for me to know that you were my mother in my last earth life, and you’ll always be ‘mother’ to me and Jack. My teacher said that many people have lived through ever so many earth lives, but not all. Raymond is awfully anxious to know if he has, but he has not been told yet. We are not told anything important like that, without express permission from Almighty God, through our Master Christ.

“We are learning much from an awfully kind man called More. You will be surprised, mother. He has come back from a much higher sphere on purpose to talk to us. We learnt all about him at school on the earth, but, of course, never had the least idea that we should ever see him, and speak to him. He was beheaded, you know, mother, when Henry VIII was king. He talks to us so much about the happiness to be found in doing our duty with the love of God in our hearts; he certainly didn’t shirk doing his bit. And we are learning, too, from another man who was once very famous on the earth, and his name is Francis of Assisi. All right, mother, my power failed for a minute; it was difficult to get the right name and I felt you were wondering what I was going to say. This wonderful spirit teaches us a great deal about the love of Christ for all dumb things. He says that the time will soon come when we shall be taught very wonderful truths about them. He said that to hurt or kill a dumb animal through mischief was just as wicked as to hurt or kill a human soul. He teaches us this so that we can help People on the earth who love all dumb creatures, for of course there is no ill-treatment of animals in my part of the spirit world.”

“Are there animals with you?”

“Oh, Yes, mother, heaps of them. Raymond has got Ids dogs with him and they are just the same, he says, as they were on earth. Stephen is here too, mother, and he says, do you remember a photograph of himself and his dog that he gave you a long time ago?

“Yes.”

“Well, that dog is here with him, and Professor Roy has got his dog. You can’t think how pleased both the dogs and their masters are! It is the same with horses, but not quite the same with cats. My new teacher says there is a reason for that, which will be told to me presently. There is a most awful lot to learn, mother, but it is all so intensely interesting.”

AUGUST 7th

“We are being taught now by an awfully nice man named Martin Luther.”

(“Tiny, is that right?”)

“Yes, it is, mother, never mind if he was a German once and spoilt lots of things.”

(“It seems queer that he should be teaching you.”)

“Yes, perhaps it does, but the old German has learned a bit since he came over, and we quite enjoy our lectures with him. He talks to us most about the freedom of the worship of the most Almighty God, and says that people have been kept back from spiritual progress because of the many conventions which different bodies have forced upon their followers. He told us that in his day it was necessary to destroy the fetters with which the Pope, as head of the Christian Church, was seeking to bind all Christians, but that he realizes now that a mistake was made by too drastic a reformation. We discussed it afterwards among ourselves and we decided that the reformation, though it was badly needed, did pave the way for much of the materialism of later times, and that is what old Luther meant. We still have Francis of Assisi to lecture to us. He is the kindest soul you can imagine and had gone on a very, very long way, but came back at the Master’s word to help us here. We are also really being taught the great truth of successive earth lives for some souls; that is a very important part of the plan of evolution. I found it very difficult to take in at first, and even now I only very dimly understand it, but I’m learning. It seems I have always been a soldier, at one time or another, and so has Jack. It’s awfully funny to think that I haven’t been an Englishman, always, but I don’t mind that. I wonder if you have ever been a man! Well, mother, you needn’t feel so shocked; it does happen, and I don’t mind knowing that I was once a woman.”

(“You said just now that you were always a soldier.”)

“Yes, I know, but when I was a woman I fought like a man and had many women under me; dear old Jack was with me too, and he was my body-guard and never left me, and when I was killed he was killed too, almost at once, so we were not separated long. It was in a very fierce battle with some wild people named Scythians, so they tell me here, but I don’t remember myself yet, but I shall some day. They tell me here that my earth lives are over, and so are yours and Jack’s. Well, that’s all the better for us, because now we shall have to go on developing in the spirit world without being hindered by our physical bodies. Well, mother, I expect you’ll hear a good deal from me on this wonderful subject now, as the Master Christ wants you to make it known on the earth that it is a truth to be learnt.”

AUGUST 8th

“More about reincarnation. When the Almighty God formed His plans for the evolution of all the races, whatever their colour or creed, He wished to let them develop entirely by themselves. But that was not possible. So He sent some of His more advanced egos to teach the people on your earth; but after a very long time and many successive earth lives, these inferior egos began to be capable of looking after themselves, and at last they were able to rule the country, only with one of the very advanced egos as their king. Well, mother, there’s an awfully funny thing coming now; it is to do with children being born. These kings, who were really great spirits, chose the fathers and mothers, so that the children should have the best chance of growing up strong and healthy; and they always took the best and strongest to form a sort of body-guard and household for the king. I don’t know how that system would answer now on the earth, but we are told that it worked all right in those far off days.

“So long as the people had such a wise king as one of those advanced egos to look after them, they were prosperous, and the name of that time on earth was the Golden Age. But presently, the Almighty God withdrew all those protecting egos, and the people were left to themselves. Then they began to deteriorate in all sorts of ways, and so ever since then, it has been necessary for God to send a great teacher from time to time to try to bring them back to Him. Ever so many of the people in these days lived on the continent of Atlantis, and some of them are incarnate on the earth now. We are told that some of those who are on the earth now in physical bodies were taught and trained by great spirits, as we are now - in the spirit world. There was really a time, you know, mother, when very mighty spirits walked about on the earth like men. Well, all of these people who were not advanced enough to go on living good lives by themselves after the mighty egos who ruled them had left them, gradually sunk lower and lower and were not much better than animals. And the others who were able to follow the path, though very dimly and uncertainly, were the forerunners of the Anglo-Saxon to-day. It is awfully difficult for me to get this through to you, mother, because I don’t understand it very well myself, but I’ll do the best I can, though it may be a bit muddled.

“I want to make the bit clear about forerunners. It really means that almost all the famous men of our race now, were living when Atlantis was still a continent. Doesn’t it seem strange, mother? They tell me here that you were living on Atlantis then, and so was I and Jack, and Mrs. Roy and the Professor, and the king, and Bruno, and my teacher, Frank of Oxford, and many more who are here with me now.

“Now I will tell you something of my work here with my ‘friend Raymond. We go together sometimes to a place called the Hall of Reasoning. It’s a wonderful place, mother, with a very high roof and large windows with all sorts of coloured glass in them. There we listen to some of the more advanced spirits who are discussing topics of vital importance to the welfare of souls on your plane. There will be a most

awful lot to do after the War, for all those men who have the real interest of the Empire at heart. And, you know, mother, all their wonderful plans and arrangements for helping people are put into their minds from our side. They very seldom know it, but it's true all the same. My teacher, Frank of Oxford, comes with us sometimes and explains any difficulty to us. We also go to another most lovely place called the 'Garden of Rest,' and that is when we have come back from those terribly sad places, and our minds are very tired with our efforts to help those unhappy people; and also with struggling with the black forces. Raymond says he is absolutely longing for the day when all the evil Will be conquered for all time, but I tell him that that is so far off that we had better not think about it, but put our backs into beating that particular bit of evil that threatens our particular work."

AUGUST 9th

"We are told that every one of us men who gave our lives willingly for the cause of righteousness in this war has finished with earth life. We are not told much about our former lives yet, only now and then a little is told us. My guides tell me that many hundreds of years ago I was a Roman centurion and fought with my men against Hannibal, the Carthaginian general. I was awfully pleased when they told me that, and they also said that my mother was a Roman matron then and a relation of mine, though not my mother. And then I asked about Jack, and they said, 'Oh yes, he was a Roman, too, and commander of a cohort, and you were one of his favourite centurions.'" And, later on, they said, I was a soldier in England and fought at Crecy and Poitiers. And they said my training in all those lives helped me so much when I went into the Army in my last life. We are taught that reincarnation has been part of the Almighty God's plan of evolution for a very definite reason. It was so ordained that men should understand human nature through and through, in all its aspects. We know that it is almost impossible to learn all the lessons in one life, or even in two or three, but we have to go on living earth lives until the lessons are all learnt. Will you please do all you can to make people understand this, mother? The Master Christ wants it known now, in preparation for the new manifestation of God which will be coming on the earth soon."

("What does that mean exactly?")

"Well, mother, I really mean that my Master Christ will shew forth the majesty of God on the earth again, as He did in Palestine 2,000 years ago."

("Do you mean that He will take a physical body or that He will materialise?")

"I can't tell you that just now, but I may say that many people will know Him and speak to Him, and be so awfully thankful for the opportunity - but some of them will behave as they did before. And, mother, you know we are thinking so much of your world just now, because of this mighty chance which the Almighty God is giving it again, to get out of the awful materialism into which it has sunk, and to climb up to the glorious real truth of spiritual teaching. That is one of the reasons why you have

been given the power to write, that you could be a messenger for Christ; because He knows you have got a good way along the road that leads to a perception of what is meant by the Christ-like life. We also know that this new teaching, though it isn't new really, will make lots of people most awfully angry. They will say that you are possessed by an evil spirit, and that all my messages are just rank blasphemy, and that in the olden days you would have been burned as a witch, and rot like that. But don't you mind, mother. It's all true, every bit of it, and you are doing God's work, and not the devil's. We want you to let the poor folk know if you can, and let them read my messages if you can manage it. We know that so many of them are heart-broken just now, and they haven't any real faith in what the parson tells them. That is why the Board think the messages of so much importance because they come from a boy straight to his mother, and they think you will be able to do something with some of the poorer folk in Cambridge as a beginning. Well now, there is just one other thing. I want to say I was here last night when your friend was talking about money spoiling the medium. It was perfectly true, and the reason why this so-called 'Spiritualism' has such a bad name. It has been so mixed up with most undesirable people and customs, and is only just beginning to start on a higher plane of thought. The advanced spirits on my plane have been working so hard to raise the standard for many years now, and they are so happy to know that it is being put on a different footing altogether. My Master Christ says that love and prayer are the mighty means to an almighty end."

AUGUST 10th

"We are learning much about the new manifestation of God which is surely coming on the earth. Immense preparations are being made for it on our side and there are many people looking out for it on your plane. This new manifestation is all part of the Almighty God's plan for the evolution of mankind, and so nothing abnormal or unnatural; it has happened many times, when the necessity arose, and you will be able to understand it better when I am allowed to tell you more.

"Now I will say something about the wonderful teaching of successive lives on earth in physical bodies. Some of the very advanced spirits are able to remember a great deal of their earth lives, and they all know how necessary it was for them to have been trained in that way. There are many people here who don't believe it is true, even though they are taught it, but it is true, mother, and they ought to make up their minds to it. When I was first taught it, I thought it quite impossible - for a moment - but I can see it quite clearly now. We all have a very long training in the spirit life each time our physical bodies perish, and we carry on with us into our next earth life the effect of that training. Of course, we don't know that when we are in the body, but it is a fact. We never go back, so to speak. I mean that each of our earth lives is a step forward in our evolution, although our position in life in the earth world might not be a very exalted one.

"Circumstances make our character, or rather the way in which we behave in them.

“Some very advanced spirits when they have finished with their earth lives and come to the spirit world, to a very high plane, will have the choice given them if they will reincarnate again. There is no blame to them if they refuse: the Master Christ has too large a heart to blame anybody, but when they refuse it does mean that there is still a tiny bit of selfishness left in them, because their reincarnation would have meant a special bit of work for the Master. When you come over at night, mother, the next time, I’ll take you to see my teacher Bruno. He has gone on so far and learnt so much, and is so wise and kind to me. You came last night and we had a long talk, and you told me all about the arrangements for publishing the messages that I have been allowed to send you.

“I think your hair is whiter but that doesn’t matter.”

(“I dreamt I saw you and spoke to you, but it was horribly mixed up.”)

“Yes, I know your dream was mixed up again, but you are beginning to remember, and when you say you dream you are taking messages down it isn’t a dream really, you are here, and I am talking to you and so is the Professor; he is very anxious for the time when you really will remember all you see and hear on this side.

“Jack is a very fine soul, mother. They know it over here, and the Master Christ has given him a special guide because He wants him for one of the fathers of the next generation.”

AUGUST 12th

“This last attack by Foch has had marvellous results. Our part of the spirit world is practically free from evil influences now, but other parts are just crammed full; so Raymond and I are busy all day long with those souls who are flocking over to the sad parts. Some of them will not realize that their physical death is their soul’s salvation; they still want to go on fighting and killing their fellowmen. We are much helped by our special guides, but the work is very, very difficult.

“Our Master Christ sent for me the other day and told me He was proud of me and knew me for a faithful worker for Him! Wasn’t it splendid, mother; I did feel so glad. But I told Him I couldn’t do the work by myself, and that not only were my guides so much help to me, but that you helped me so much on the earth plane. And He smiled that wonderful smile of His, and He said, ‘My child, mothers are the most wonderful of all creation.’ My mother is, I thought. And then He told me again how wonderfully powerful is the prayer of a living soul on earth for those in the spirit world, and said, ‘Will you please tell your mother that I wish it known widely on the earth; it has been much forgotten, but nevertheless is a profound truth.’ So will you please remember that, mother?

“Something about successive earth lives. We learn that some people have lived on other planets before they came to your earth, and that is most awfully interesting. Some of the wonderful religious reformers are among the number, and some of the mighty statesmen also lived on other planets, many thousands of years ago.

“We realize now that the truth of many earth lives explains a good deal of the suffering on the earth, and also we see the truth of the teaching that we make or mar our own lives. We have had to dismiss from our minds the teaching of so many parsons on your plane; that Christ made atonement to the Almighty God by shedding His blood on the cross. It is an entirely false idea grafted on to the real truth. The great Spirit, Christ our Master, lived on the earth for many years in the body of Jesus the carpenter’s son and taught men the way of salvation as far as they were able to appreciate it at that time. There was no question of shedding blood for us - we know that here.

“Jesus the son of Mary and Joseph died on the Cross a victim to the hatred and malice of the Church of that time. The great Christ Spirit continued His work on earth long after that terrible scene of suffering on Calvary. Jesus is a great Master now, and a most wonderful Spirit - but he is not yet a Christ. We always speak and think of him with the utmost reverence, because we realize how very advanced he must have been for the Almighty God to have chosen him for the special dwelling-place of our Master Christ on the earth. Will you tell people this too, please, mother, it is the command from the Almighty God Himself.”

AUGUST 13th

“We are taught now by a wonderful spirit named Martin Luther. I told you about him before, and you were rather surprised because he was a German. Well, that doesn’t matter over here, you know, mother, because we are not labelled! My Martin Luther is quite different from the usual idea of him. He had grasped the truth of the love of Christ while he was on your plane, and that brought him to my beautiful part of the spirit world - though he made mistakes in his teaching. He has had to learn much over here, and one of the principal things was the power of prayer on the earth for those in the spirit world, wherever they may happen to be. Now he knows that great truth and is teaching others. We also have a new teacher named William Penn. He was a Quaker when he lived on your earth and my guides tell me he was a very good man. He talks to us of the gentleness of God and said that he was once obliged to do certain things which were contrary to the teaching of the Church. They were not contrary to the teaching of Christ, but the Church had chosen to explain His teaching quite differently from what it really was. We are much interested in both these teachers - and we are realizing more and more what a stupendous mistake the Church on the whole has made in utterly refusing to recognize the possibility of communication between the plane of spirit and the plane of matter. We over here can see what an enormous difference there is between the outlook of the present day compared with that of even five years ago. My teacher, Frank of Oxford, says there has been enormous progress since his time-I mean in matters that relate to spirit life. Will you tell people this, mother? It will help a great many to be told that even an Anglican bishop, had a very great deal to learn, and much more to unlearn, when he came over to our side. We are also hoping that the messages that I have been

allowed to send will bring a ray of light into many a sorrowing home.

“You don’t know how keenly we are watching you, mother. We are so anxious for you to develop your power to the utmost. We often talk about you, and my teacher, Frank of Oxford, says that there is no doubt that your bravery when Jack and I went out to fight was an inheritance from your days of life as a Roman mother. Don’t you like that! It does make everything so clear, doesn’t it, when once you’ve grasped the truth that you have had experience of earth life before?”

AUGUST 14th

“We are waiting for my Master’s permission before we can say much more about this new manifestation which is coming on the earth. A great spirit from a very high plane indeed has been specially sent by the Almighty God just now, to help us in our work among the poor people in the very sad places. We still have our special guides that I told you of before, but this great spirit has been sent to help us by telling us how much the Almighty God realizes our difficulties and dangers. He doesn’t go with us to those dark parts, but always sends for us before we go and heartens us up for the job. We are so grateful, because the work is harder than you have any idea of just now. For a little time the Black Forces will be allowed to do their utmost - it is their final kick. And, although we know they won’t be triumphant, they can do an awful lot of harm while they are in power. It makes those poor souls suffer so much more. Some of them are almost devils now, they are so filled with evil, but we shall save them all in time. We feel sometimes how very young and inexperienced we are, and that makes us so thankful for the help of this great spirit.

“My guides tell me that he comes from a very high plane indeed, very near to the great God Himself. I can’t describe him, mother. If you could possibly imagine what Jesus must have looked like on the Mount of Transfiguration, it would give you some idea of his appearance. He is very tall and commanding looking and his voice sounds like a waterfall. But with all this awful majesty he is so kind and gentle, so we don’t feel a bit afraid of him, only we would never dare to do anything that could displease him.

“We are taken journeys sometimes to far distant spheres, for the sake of our education in the spirit world, and we call these journeys our holidays. I’m not allowed to tell you very much about those spheres just yet; the Master Christ wants all my messages to reach you quite slowly and gently.

“Still learning about reincarnation. We are told that some people have many earth lives, very quickly, one after the other, but others stay in the spirit world for a long time in between. We have a great deal to learn about the methods employed, and I don’t know much about it yet. But my guides have told me that the soul knows when the time comes for its re-entry into the world of matter, and just waits for instruction from the Master Christ.

“I’m glad you and I and Jack have finished with our earth lives; I think we all three

lived in very stirring times from the very beginning. Will you tell people how important it is for them to believe that reincarnation is a fact, but not a universal law. It has happened that some souls were able to grasp all that the Almighty God meant them to learn, in one earth life.”

AUGUST 15th

“When I came yesterday I told you how much we are helped just now by that wonderful spirit from a very high plane. I can’t tell you how he cheers us up, mother. We think, and believe, that he is putting more divinity into us. I can’t explain very well, but what I really mean is that some of the power of the Almighty God is literally being given to us just now, to help us in our terrific struggle with the Black Forces, on behalf of those poor folk in the sad places. Raymond says it makes him feel strong enough to do the job single-handed, and I feel like that too. You don’t know, mother, what awful suffering some of those poor souls are experiencing just now, and Raymond and I are absolutely determined, that not one of the lot committed to our care shall be dragged down any lower by the evil powers. They look for our visits so much, and some of them are realizing that they can and will escape when they are ready. The Master Christ wants this teaching thoroughly understood, please, mother, and explained. It is not a punishment by the Almighty God for the evil they did on the earth: it is only a result of their own actions. No one is to blame but themselves, our Master Christ’s large heart is aching for them all, but even He can’t do away with the consequences they have brought upon themselves. Don’t let people think it is the old biblical idea of physical torture, mother, it’s not that at all; it’s only that they see their folly and know they must suffer before they are released. You know, mother, torture of the mind is much worse than torture of the body, and when the time comes for the Kaiser to leave the world and come to this side, his worst victims will not be able to feel any resentment against him. We are not allowed to say more than that, but I have been given permission to tell you that little bit, because the Master Christ wishes you to press home this teaching. Now, one other thing. We see sometimes some of the souls who have worked through the very worst part of their training, and they all acknowledge the justice of God. No one ever says, ‘My punishment is unfair,’ or anything like that. You have no idea of their thankfulness when they come to my beautiful part or of their gratitude for the love that is shewn to them there. We do all we can for them to make them realize that we are their friends. I’m telling you a good deal about the very sad parts because most of my work is there, but sometimes I am sent to parts where people are not at all unhappy but not yet ready to come to my part. In some ways they are very hard to influence, because they are more or less content with their surroundings, they don’t want anything better. We try to tell them something of our beautiful home and now and then a few will respond but it is very slow development. Many of them were quite good people on your earth, and went to church a lot, but they have no perception at all of spiritual truth, and so they will not develop properly for a long time. There are ever so many districts in the spirit world, you know, mother, and” countries

corresponding to countries on your plane, only very much bigger. That means, there is an England in the spiritual world, only much larger than the physical England and ever so much more beautiful. We are taught a good deal of chemistry here, and find it awfully interesting, but rather difficult, because we are not yet quite familiar with the terms our teachers use.”

AUGUST 16th

“All our work in the dark places has been stopped for a time, and much more advanced spirits are going on with it. Our Master Christ sent for all of us who had been doing it and said we had worked awfully well, but the dangers had now become too great for us in our present stage of development. We are rather sorry, because neither Raymond nor I were afraid of the devils, but, of course, the Master knows best and we shall have other work to do where there is not so much danger.

“More about reincarnation. My teacher, Frank of Oxford, says it was distasteful to him at first and he rebelled against the teaching, but he knows now that it is a real truth, and he sees the wisdom of the plan for many people, but not for all. That’s the point, mother, a general plan, but not a universal law. The Master Christ wants you to make people understand that, because there are teachers in the world now, who say that reincarnation is the foundation stone of all spiritual teaching, and an unalterable universal law. They are making a big mistake, and the Master wishes you to assure all the people you can that His plan, or rather the Almighty God’s plan, working through Him, includes reincarnation as part of the machinery, but with the necessary restrictions. There would not be any sense in sending a soul to incarnate time after time if that soul had already learnt, in one incarnation, all the lessons that earth life had to teach. So don’t let the teaching of this great truth blind you to the equally important truth that it is restricted. We are also learning much about the real nature of God. That is awfully difficult, mother, and I can’t get it through to you yet, but perhaps I shall some day. You know we have to learn how to send our messages; it doesn’t exactly come by instinct. And when a subject is new to us and very difficult, we have to master it before we can talk about it to people on the earth plane. It is much easier to write through you now, mother, than it was at first; you are developing into an extraordinarily good medium.”

AUGUST 17th

“I am now working chiefly with the children in the spirit world. It is a great change from my old work, and I like it awfully. They are such jolly kids and want to know a great deal about my life on earth. You see, mother, most of them died when they were very small, and so they don’t remember anything of earth life. As you know, I have been allowed to remember for a very special reason and so I can tell them a lot. I tell them what fun Jack and I used to have at school, and how we used to go to the sea, and dash about in the water, and have much merriment. I’ve put that to make you laugh, mother, because that was a favourite expression of mine. And then I tell them about our Christmas on earth, and how we used to sing carols, and have

presents in our stockings and a Christmas tree. Don't think this foolish, mother, it's nothing of the kind; the Master Christ wants these children to know all about earth life. Then I tell them that my mother used to come and tuck me up at night, and say, 'God bless you, men' (that was Jack and me), and that you used to rag us, and we used to rag you! These children just love to hear all about it. And I tell the older ones about our games at school, and some of them want to know something about the War, and I tell them a little but not very much, because the Master Christ wishes them to wait for that. You would laugh, mother, if you could see me with these kids! They sprawl all over me and never leave off asking me questions, especially about you and Jack and Molly. They know what love is here and so they can understand your love for me and mine for you. Then we play all sorts of games and there is never any quarrelling. If one of them is sometimes inclined to be a tiny bit selfish, a word from me puts it all right; there is no need even for that very often, just a look is enough. Sometimes the Master Christ comes to this big nursery, and you should just see the children then, 'mother; they make a headlong rush for Him, and He is so awfully kind and gentle to them. Even the very smallest know Him and love Him. I always stand aside when He comes and wait to see if He wants to speak to me. Sometimes He can't stay very long, so He just smiles and goes on His way. But sometimes He talks to me. It is so splendid for me then, mother, it makes me want to do my work better than ever before."

AUGUST 18th (AFTERNOON)

"They are so very nice to teach because they know no fear, and have only met with love in their lives here.

Sometimes I try to tell them a fairy story like you used to tell us, but it isn't much in my line and they can tell me better ones! But they do like to hear about life on the earth plane, and specially about the lives of children there. We have a great many children here now of all ages and classes. Some of the bigger ones in another part remember a little of their earth lives if they did not come ever here directly they were born, and these children ask me so many questions. Some of them were killed by the Germans, in Belgium, in this war, and were awfully frightened when they first came over, poor little beggars, because they thought the Germans were still hurting them. But my Master Christ came to them at once, and brought with Him ever so many mothers who had lived on the earth not so very long before, and who had loved their own children, and they took care of these poor little creatures, and soon they were just as happy as possible. Mother, do you know that one of the things which will take longer than any other for the Germans to wipe out, will be their awful cruelty to tiny children and to women. We see it all, and we know that their actions now are going to bear most terrible consequences to themselves when they come over. Not all of them, of course, because there are some decent chaps who loathe the work they have to do.

"A good deal of our teaching now is on the so-called scientific side of the spiritual

life, and we must learn all we can so as to teach others later on. My friend Raymond finds it easier than I do. You see, mother, I wasn't at school on earth for very long, was I? and hadn't learnt much chemistry, which would have helped me now.\* We are taught all about the composition of our earth bodies and about the much finer bodies that we have now. And lots about ether, and radium and wonderful things like that. Our bodies are every

bit as real as those we had on earth, only they are not so thick and clumsy, and we have no need of internal organs. My body is just the same as it was on earth, and I've still got the scar on my cheek, where the splinter from the bomb hit me when I was in charge of a bombing course at Etaples in France, and there is the mark of the bullet in my head which killed me last year. Raymond has got his wounds still shewing too; you see we are just the same as when you knew us. Sometimes men come over here who have had their arms or legs or heads blown away. Well, it doesn't make any difference to them here, they are whole and unhurt. And when my Master Christ wants to know how such a man is getting on, we can always say, 'Sir, he is quite well, and able to do his work.' I have put it in language like this to you, but I feel you can understand what I really mean; I shall be able to express myself better when I have had more practice. When I came over one of my men came up to me and said he had been blown to pieces by a shell, but, he added, 'I'm all right again now, Sir.' It sounded so awfully strange at first, but I understand it much better now. Our physical bodies are just the coverings for ourselves, so it doesn't matter what happens to them after we have finished with them. I didn't bother a bit about mine, why should I? I had got a body, and a much nicer one, and that was all that was needed. We are told by our guides that we shall have still finer bodies some day, but not for a long time. I'm telling you all this about bodies, mother, because the Master Christ wants people to rid themselves of the notion that we, in the spirit world are like shadowy bits of cloud blowing about all over the place. We are nothing of the kind. We are still men, with bodies, and feelings, and affections, and intelligence, living ordered, busy lives, but in different conditions and methods, from life on your plane. Get rid of that horrible word

\* Tiny was on the classical side. - JESSIE PLATTS.

'Ghosts'; it conveys an utterly false impression. The spirit world is all round you, mother, just like the material, and some day you will be advanced enough to see it. Why, at this moment I'm in the drawing-room with you, just standing by you while you write, and I'm touching your shoulder, but I know you can't see me or feel me yet. But you Will, mother, a bit later on."

AUGUST 19th

"We are learning a good deal now about life on other planets; most of them have people living on them, you know, mother. We thought it awfully strange at first and we could hardly believe it, but we soon found it was true. My teacher Bruno tells us a good deal about Venus; he has lived there for a long time and so he knows all about

it; he says that Venus is a most beautiful world to live in. Not much like our earth, but more like the beautiful part of the spirit world where I am. The people, my teacher says, are simply lovely to look at; they are tall, and the women are as tall as the men, with magnificent eyes and long hair. They don't wear quite the same kind of clothes as men and women do on your earth, but loose flowing things something like the old Roman toga. Most of them wear white robes, but all have wide borders of some colour on them. He says that many of them have lived on your earth many hundreds of years ago, and that they were part of the many souls who were able to develop without many incarnations. They are a very happy nation; all of them have realized the love of God, and make love the keynote of their lives. My teacher says there is no fighting in Venus; they don't know what war is like, and he says that there will come a time when people on our earth will be like the people in Venus: they will all love each other, and no one will want anything that his neighbour has. Of course, it won't be for a long time yet, but the time will arrive for such a state of things.

“My work is awfully interesting now because I am sent among those people who have escaped from the very sad places and reached a sort of half-way house to my beautiful part. Some of them have had a terribly long training, poor souls, but they are free now, and they are so thankful. Some of them had been told that a boy was one of the helpers appointed by the Master Christ, and they said they had been looking out for me, because they had not seen me before in the very dark places. I try to tell them of the amazing love of Christ, and how glad we all are to be able to help them at all, and how we are looking forward to the time when they will come to live in my beautiful part. They listen very attentively, and one of them said to me one day, ‘Young man, how did you know about the love of Christ for us?’ And I told them that the Master Christ was carrying out the orders of the Almighty God, and that before we started on our work He called us to Him and told us that every single soul was precious in the sight of God and in His, and we were always to remember that, however evil the soul may have become during its time on earth. That seemed to interest him very much, and he said, ‘Shall I ever be allowed to speak to the Master Christ?’ and I said, ‘Oh, yes, indeed you will, when you are ready.’ And then he said, ‘May the Almighty God in His infinite wisdom, grant that the time may not be long.’ And Raymond and I just said ‘Amen.’ So you see, mother, how ordinary and natural life is here. We would not exchange it for anything, for life on your plane. We know that we can get into touch with our people, and are being taught that that will get easier and easier, as fuller knowledge comes to people on the earth. And we also know that we shall always have those we love with us, even though they may have some training to go through first. We want you to make people realize, mother, that death does not end things: it is only the beginning of a really splendid life.”

AUGUST 19th

(“Are you here, Tiny darling?”)

“Yes, mother, for a minute. Don't be unhappy because you can't see me and take

hold of me in the ordinary way. You do really, you know, mother, and I can always feel you're hugging me when you say you wish you could. Be a brave soul, mother, and let people know that your belief in my continued existence is a reality to you."

("I didn't mean to grouse, dear old man, and certainly didn't mean you to know I")

"No, of course you didn't, but I caught your thought and came along for a minute."

("I must be more careful.")

Yes, you must, I always know when you're feeling a bit more lonely than usual, but I can't always come to you, because I have my work to do."

AUGUST 20th

"We are learning so much about the scientific side of life as a whole, whether on our plane or on yours. You know, mother, there is a cause and a reason for everything, and we are being given the answers here to a great deal that puzzles people on your plane. We are told that we are not made up of many particles of matter that perish at death of the physical body, but that we have three bodies, each of which is composed of certain atoms that become finer and finer as our several bodies develop. Will you try to take this down as carefully as you can, mother? it is awfully difficult for me to explain it to you. These different bodies have different work to do, and each of them develops on different lines. Our physical bodies are given us for a shell or covering for the other two, and when we die we leave that body behind us, as we should a worn out suit of clothes, we have no further use for it. But we have still two other bodies and they are called the astral and the mental bodies. My teacher, Frank of Oxford, is here this morning, and helping me to get this through, as it really is awfully difficult, mother. Well, the astral or spiritual body is the one I'm wearing now. It's exactly like my physical one as far as appearance goes, but it is made up of much finer atoms, and so can do all sorts of things that were not possible for me to do when I was living on the earth. But this astral body has some very marked differences. We do not have any internal organs like those we had on the earth, so we do not need any ordinary food. All the food we want we absorb from the atmosphere round us. We have teeth in our mouths, but that is because to all appearances we are the same as on earth, but they never give us any trouble and no one wants a dentist here. Then the next great difference is the way in which we can hear and see things, although we may not be in the place where they are happening; not only in the present, but, later on, when we are more developed - the past and the future. There are some people on the earth who have that power now, in a limited degree, but here everyone has it to an unlimited degree; I mean as regards the present, at least all those who are in my part. Well, that's pretty wonderful, mother, isn't it? I'm longing for the time when I shall be allowed to see backwards and forwards! Of course, we walk about our home here, it's only when we want to travel that we propel ourselves, so to speak. Don't you think this is an awfully interesting message, mother? Now I must go, but there is a good deal more to tell you when permission is given."

**AUGUST 20th**

“Well now, just a word for this friend of yours who is sitting on the sofa hugging her beads I \* Tell her that our Master Christ is worthy of the highest honour that can be paid to Him on earth. Although He is not the Almighty God Himself, He is the fullest manifestation of Him that has appeared. You can always ask Him to help you and He always will.”

**AUGUST 21 st**

“Our present bodies, which some people describe as astral, are counterparts of our physical ones, but without certain of their limitations. We shall have these bodies for a very, very long time, and then we shall drop them as we did our earth bodies, and wear the third body which is called the mental body. We are told that losing our astral body will be a kind of death, but with nothing terrifying or painful about it. We are told that we shall be ‘purged as with fire,’ but we don’t know exactly what that means. Only we do know that it doesn’t mean burning as you understand it on the earth. We are all much interested and quite content to leave the issue to our Master Christ. When we are wearing our mental bodies we shall have become advanced spirits, and able to do very much more difficult work, and have infinitely more power of all kinds. Some of the people who have come back from the higher Planes are wearing their mental bodies. My teacher Bruno is one, and Sir Thomas More is another. We have much to learn before we may wear those bodies, and in the meanwhile we must do the work the Master gives us just as well as we can, and not trouble about the future.”

\* I looked up to see, when Tiny said this, and she was hugging her rosary. - JESSIE PLATTS,

**AUGUST 22nd**

We are being taught now about the result of our actions on earth, and the effect they have on our lives in the spirit world. Many people would simply laugh at the idea, because they would use that utterly wrong expression ‘Christ died for our sins’ and ‘We are saved by His blood.’ It’s all wrong, mother, every word of it, and it’s the fundamental mistake of the Christian Church. We alone are responsible, here, and on your earth. We have had the perfect example of a perfect life given us by the Master Christ, when He was on earth in the body of Jesus the Carpenter. That was the important fact; not the death of the disciple on the Cross, but the life of the Master on earth in the body of that disciple. We know all about it here, and how the mistake was made, and that is why I am talking about actions and their consequences this morning. Each time we do or think anything deliberately wrong we make a consequence which we have got to pay for. Not only have we to become sorry for what we did, but we have got to make up to the person we wronged - in deed or thought - for the injury that we did him. We want you to make people understand please, mother, that that is an unalterable law, and not subject to

restrictions like reincarnation. It is most important that we should make reparation on earth if we can; it is much harder to do so in the spirit world, and that is why some people suffer so much. On the other hand, we are given the good consequences of good actions, and kind thoughts and words. Do you know, mother, sometimes souls come over here who are most awfully surprised at being in such a beautiful place, and we tell them, 'Well, you earned the right to come here while you were on the earth.' Sometimes they still don't understand, and then their guides will say, 'Well, do you remember such and such a thing? because that brought you here.'

'Oh, yes, but that was such a little thing!' That answer always makes us smile - in a kind way - you know, mother, because we understand how much the little things, that people forget at once, go towards making or marring their lives in the spirit world, as well as their earth lives. We are most anxious that people should begin to understand this essential truth of spiritual teaching. When the new manifestation of God is come to the earth, this will be one of the most important points of the teaching; this and the other one that our great Master Christ whom we love and revere so much, was once an ordinary man. The world is going to be an infinitely happier place when these two points have been grasped by the masses. We are also told how important our thoughts are, and how they influence other people in a way quite unknown to them. I am speaking now of conditions on the earth. You have no idea, mother, what consequences can come from thought alone. My teacher, Frank of Oxford, says that he did not realize the importance of that when he taught people on the earth. Tell people always to think kindly of others if they possibly can; it makes such a difference to their spiritual growth."

AUGUST 23rd

"We are learning something about the nature of God. I'll try to explain, mother, but it is awfully difficult. He is perfect Love and perfect Wisdom, not a being of 'like parts and passions as ourselves' as you are told somewhere in the Prayer Book, I believe, but of infinitely higher nature; so high indeed, that only very advanced spirits have any real idea of what that means. It is quite impossible for souls on your plane to grasp it, and equally so for me and my friends here, in our present stage of development. He is the Essence of Being; that is the expression used here, mother, by my teacher Bruno, and I'll try to explain it. It means really that the whole chain of worlds and people in them, and all Creation, have their origin in Him; that He gave them life, and planned all the different ways of evolution for them. What is behind that, of course we don't know, and my teacher says that no one will ever know that until he stands face to face with God. Bruno says that Christianity, as your Church has understood it, is still so soaked with the old Jewish idea of a tribal God; someone who liked animals killed and burnt on altars to Him, and that blood would appease His wrath! Isn't it a perfectly horrible notion, mother, when you come to think of it? and no wonder many men have ceased to believe in Him at all. Will you tell them, mother, that the Almighty God is a perfectly pure Spirit, full of love and pity for all

humanity, and in whose name our Master Christ is working on your plane? My message this morning is just to tell you that commands have been laid on Him by Almighty God to demonstrate once more to people (on your plane) the plans of that most awfully wonderful Being, for the evolution of the human race, and the real spiritual teaching which He gave once before, but which, this time, will be infinitely clearer.”

AUGUST 24th

“I want to tell you that you were over here last night, and talked to ever so many of my friends, and they all told me afterwards you were just the kind of medium they wanted. Frank of Oxford had a lot to say to you but of course you can’t remember it. I took you to see the children too, and you kissed a small boy because you thought he was like me, and that made them laugh!”

(“I dreamt last night that I saw you and the Bishop and the small boy! “)

“It wasn’t a dream, mother, you were really here, and your memory is improving, though it won’t be any use to you just yet; I just wanted to tell you that before I forgot.

“Bruno is still lecturing to us on the Nature of God. He tells us that there never was a time when God did not exist; God is, and always has been, and always will be. We are told that God understands the temptations of men on the earth, though He is an absolutely sinless Being Himself. Bruno says that God is never angry, but He is unhappy sometimes over the deliberate wickedness of human beings. Bruno says that God is absolute Ruler of all the universe; that it is a false idea to say that the devil rules as well. We know there are people who say that God cannot be omnipotent when there is so much evil on the earth. But it is their mistaken idea that God sends pain and punishment which causes them to say that. They do not yet believe that all the sin and suffering is a result of their own actions, past and present, and that God is allowing them to suffer for those actions, in order that they may ultimately conquer all their lower instincts, and become worthy to be called the Sons of God. Will you please explain whenever you can, mother, that God is cognisant of all the terrible suffering and evil on the earth, and does not interfere directly to prevent it, not because He is powerless to do so, but because it is part of His plans for the evolution of your race that men should help themselves. To that end He has not left them entirely alone, but from time to time He has sent different messengers to teach them the way up to Him. There have been many teachers and many ways shewn on earth; they all have the one goal, ultimate union with God. We had the last and greatest teacher when our Master Christ walked about the Holy Land like an ordinary man, in the body of Jesus, and told people of the great love of God, and that He had come on earth to give them light, and to shew them how they might attain salvation. There was a very great deal that He could not teach people because they were not advanced enough, but some few were able to grasp the higher truths that He taught, and they have been handed down to our time, only not made public. Well,

mother, I've been given permission to tell you just a little more. The time has now come in the judgment of the Almighty God that the world should be taught again by a great teacher. So He has commanded our great Christ to work on the earth again as He did so long ago. He will not work in a human body as some people are teaching, but He will be on the earth working and teaching in His spiritual body, which you must remember, mother, is a real body, and very many people will see Him and talk to Him. Bruno says it will be a most wonderful thing for the people on your earth to have the opportunity of seeing and hearing once more this great Christ, our most beloved Master. He has already begun His work, but the climax will not be reached till the end of the War. You must try to make people on the earth understand, please, mother, the Master Christ will speak to many people in a body. I mean that although He is on the earth in His own spiritual body, He will appear in different bodies when talking to different people. Can you understand, mother?"

("Oh yes, quite well.")

"I do hope you can, because it is a very important message. That's all right, then, and, mother, you'll look out for Him, won't you; I do want you to have the chance of speaking to Him."

("I'm not worthy to speak to Him, Tiny.")

"Well, mother, of course you're not, but He'll understand, and He would be so kind to you, and I am sure He would let you ask Him about me. Now I must go, but I'll tell you some more to-morrow."

AUGUST 25th

"We are still hearing much from Bruno and Martin Luther. Both these men have advanced enormously and can teach us a lot. One of the interesting things here is to see how friendly people are who differed enormously when they were on the earth. These two are an instance. One was a Roman Catholic, and the other hated the Romish Church like poison. Well, they both talk to us much of the coming manifestation of Christ on your earth, or rather of God - through Him - and they both declare that many people will know Him and see and hear him.

"Luther has had to give up his old idea of God coming in clouds to judge the world; that awful picture of an utterly untrue teaching. How the idea used to terrify people, and what a wicked doctrine it was! Bruno has been here longer, so he learnt all about it before Luther did, and he most bitterly regrets that teaching of the Christian Church. That is one of the things the Master Christ wants you to tell people, mother. And there is another thing. No one is responsible for anybody else, except in the way of example. I mean a mother can't be blamed if her son turns out badly - if she has set him a good example, and been unselfish. That's the kernel of everything to do with the real Christianity, mother, unselfishness. And it's an awfully difficult thing to learn, because sometimes it is a person's duty to be selfish, or what looks like it, to other people."

**AUGUST 26th**

“We are being taught now by another great spirit from a very high plane indeed. He says that we must bring all our powers into play so as to use force enough to impress the people on the earth with the truth of their expectations.

Some of them are looking for the Master Christ to appear in the form of a certain man. That is wrong. The Master will not take the body of any one particular man, but will shew Himself to many people in different forms. We are told by this new teacher that much remains to be done on the earth in preparation for the full revelation, and that one of the ways in which people on the earth can help, is by believing these messages which I have been allowed to send. And he says they can help enormously by being as kind and unselfish to one another as they possibly can. He tells us that this new revelation will make an enormous difference to the social conditions on your plane, and that many awful abuses will be swept away, and a cleaner and brighter world will be the result, and a very much happier one. He tells us that this awful war has even a share in the cleansing of the world. He explains that by saying that though on Germany rests by far the largest responsibility, yet the other nations were by no means blameless, and that they all will have to suffer, and work in the reconstruction of good out of evil. We find it rather difficult to understand all He tells us, but I’ve tried to explain as well as I could. Then we are taught that much of the evil on the earth is the result of actions that were committed by people many hundreds of years ago, in previous existences. He is very clear on that point, and has told me to make you understand that and to tell people. He says it is most important truth, and one of the foundation stones of the new revelation, which is not really new at all, but as old as the hills, and has all been taught on the earth before.

“This new teacher is most wonderful to look at, mother, not like the others who came from the higher worlds, but much more like our Master Christ. His eyes look right into you, and his voice is the most glorious music you ever heard. He is awfully kind too, but we feel he could be awfully severe if there were any cause for it. We don’t feel like that with our Master Christ, we are so sure of His great love for us that we never feel the least little scrap afraid that He might be angry with us. Raymond feels just like I do.”

(“Tiny, could you find that Manchester Colonel you helped? His name is Elstob, and his people were so glad to get news of him.”)

“Yes, mother, I’ll try to find him. I haven’t seen him since I took him to the place of his rest, and he hasn’t come to my part yet. But I shall be able to find him all ‘right, I know, and I’ll tell you when I come again.”

**AUGUST 27th**

“The way of the manifestation of Christ on the earth will be as I have told you, but we are not yet allowed to say what sort of people will see Him. It will be on a much

bigger scale than last time, and in a different way. Make people understand that He is really on the earth now, mother, though they can't see Him, and that will prepare them for the bigger thing later on. There will be no suffering for the Master Christ this time because He will not take a definite human body; that He did, once and for all, 2,000 years ago. We were so glad to know that; we simply couldn't bear the idea of bodily suffering for Him. And He won't be so unhappy mentally this time, because He knows there are so many souls who are simply longing for Him to come again. But this great spirit tells us that, as before, the trouble will be with the orthodox religious folk on the earth, both priests and people, and that is one of the reasons for these messages; we are told that they will have an enormous influence in helping to prepare the world to receive Him, because they are just sent by a boy to his mother. This great spirit also says that many things will happen on your earth a little later on, which people will not be able to understand, and will call supernatural. They won't be that at all, but just part of our Master Christ's manifestation.

**AUGUST 28th**

"All that I have told you about the new manifestation is true and commanded by the Almighty God Himself. It is being told beforehand this time so that people will not be so astonished when the full manifestation is declared. Much will happen in the meanwhile of an extraordinarily interesting character. Barriers of class will be broken down, the standard of wages will be made equal for men and women if they are doing the same work, and, little children will be much better looked after. All these things will be the outcome of much spiritual force from this side. We can see so very much more here, but we may not tell much to you. Will you say, please, mother, that when the Master Christ really manifests Himself to people in different bodies He will never frighten them. Some people have got the idea that it would be a terrifying experience to see and talk to Him. I'm sure it won't be, mother; He's ever so much too kind and gentle to treat people in a way that would frighten them.

"We are so anxious that the priests on your earth should become more enlightened. They are the stumbling-blocks in the way of the new revelation. We hope much that they will listen to all who have grasped its reality, but we know there will be much bitter opposition.

"I'm working now with my friend Raymond in a part of the spirit world which is called the place of unbelief. That is where quite good men go who lived pure lives on earth, but utterly ignored the fact of Christ and the Almighty God. We like that work very much because there is no unhappiness there, only a state of faithlessness. These men are hard to teach, very, but most of them are willing to listen, and we hope that some of them are getting a little inclined to believe in our Master. My guides say that many more come to this part than people on earth know, and some of them stay a very, very long time."

**AUGUST 29th**

“Just now we are learning much about the destinies of different parts of the human race on your earth. No one wonders at the development of white races, but people don’t readily believe that the coloured races are working out their evolution on the same lines. I’ll just say a word about that. Some of the most advanced of the white races at a distant time haven’t much to boast of now Well, that is because after many hundreds of years the egos that peopled those countries have worked through their time. My teacher Bruno says that the egos who are on the upward path, only stay with a nation while it is progressing collectively. When the masses deteriorate, the advanced egos go to another nation, perhaps a much younger one as regards their position on the earth, but where the people are progressing in the right lines. Bruno says that this is the explanation of the downfall of all the great nations of the past. He says the time is approaching for the speedy development among the yellow races, and with the cosmopolitan races in the United States. We are most awfully interested in Bruno’s teaching, mother, and I want to tell you as much as I possibly can, but it isn’t very easy. He says there is slowly springing up in the United States of America, the nucleus of a very great nation, and one that will develop on the very highest spiritual lines, and be filled with the love of God and our Master Christ. He says there are children alive now, and others about to be born, who will have splendid egos, full of love and service to humanity, and conscious of their link with the Almighty God, as the Father of the human race. This coming nation will exercise an enormous power for good over the rest of the world. The Germans will sink back to a state of insignificance. My teacher says that the more advanced egos will not incarnate in Germany for a very, very long time. Well, that’s awfully interesting, mother, and quite easy to understand, isn’t it?

(“Yes, quite.”)

“The Black Forces have dominated that country to such an extent by the rank materialism of the people that no advanced ego would be allowed to work in that nation. They will work through all right but their awful cruelties and base treachery in this war, have much retarded their evolution.

“Now a little about my life. My work is still among those clever people who would have nothing to say to our Master Christ. Some of them even now won’t believe in Him; they even tell me that I am mistaken. Of course, I roar with laughter at that, it’s so awfully stupid. And then I tell them over and over again, that belief in the Master’s love is the one thing they want to make them fit to know Him in my beautiful part. At last I think there is one person who wants to break away and come to us. He is an awfully nice man really, and will be a most tremendous help when once he has grasped the truth of God’s almighty love, as shewn by the Master Christ. He was a doctor on your plane, and admired all teaching that spoke alone of moral law. Christianity in any form of doctrine or worship, he utterly ignored. His name is Maxwell, but I don’t know anything about him.”

AUGUST 30th

“That wonderful spirit I told you of before says that men on earth have got to learn two things: one is their duty to God, and the other their duty to other people. Both these precepts exist now in word, but not in act, and he says that the world, as a whole, has very largely forgotten the very existence of the Almighty God, That was one of the causes which was behind the outbreak of this terrible war, and men have got to suffer in every kind of way, before they can purge themselves, and be ready to receive the Master Christ. By putting God out of their minds so much, a way was made for the evil powers to obtain more influence over people on your earth, especially in Germany, and that has prolonged and intensified the War. We do not know how much we English people are to blame, but we’ve certainly had a share in it. God looked on in the deepest compassion, but did not interfere, for reasons that I have given you.

“Many of the mightiest spirits are helping on the earth now against the Black Forces, and the result of their efforts is being seen in the rapid retreat of the Germans.

“I’ve been a good deal in France just lately, mother, especially near Gavrelle, the place where I was killed last year, and I’ve not been helping the ‘men who are about to die, this time, but I’ve been with the men who are advancing, and fighting with them! You’ll think that’s rot, mother, but it isn’t. I am fighting with our men, and just bucking them up for all I’m worth! I was with our men when Bapaume was taken, and felt as glad as they did,\* only sorry for the awful necessity for so much suffering. Then I went to the French Army, and helped there. I thought some of those men were really conscious of help from the other side; they fought so magnificently.”

\* I did not know if we or the French had taken Bapaume till after Tiny’s message came through. - JESSIE PLATTS.

AUGUST 31 st

“Much has been told us lately of the power of the love of Christ for people on your earth, who are living perfectly careless wicked lives. I mean that those men may be influenced from a distant past, and though they may be acting now in an utterly wicked way, yet the distant memory of a time when they did believe in Him and in His love for them, keeps them from going more deeply into the power of the evil ones. I am told to press this point to-day, mother, so that no person need think that anyone has gone so far away from God, that His love and our Master’s is unable to reach him. No one has ever been abandoned by God, and no one ever will be. We are told here about a terrible form of Christianity that some people have taught, and are still teaching, and that is that only certain people will be what they call ‘saved.’ It’s all wrong; there is no such thing as being ‘saved’ in the way they mean, and the Master Christ is anxious that that false teaching should be done away with. You can see now, mother, can’t you, how much there is to do to prepare the way for Him. We know it is a difficult task to uproot and dislodge long-cherished beliefs and opinions, but it has got to be done, and all the pioneers on your earth have much assistance from our

side. In a way the earth is more difficult to influence now than when the Master came before, because now there is what is called the Christian Church firmly established; that Church which is so painfully unlike the Master whose name it bears. Well, there is a good deal for its priests to learn; at present most of them can be described as others were in the long past, 'blind leaders of the blind.' Some of them are becoming enlightened, and they, as has happened so often before, are just regarded as 'cranks' by the rest of the clergy. The masses on your plane are calling out for fuller light and more definite instruction, and it will be given them. Realize and tell people, mother, that the way up to God always means sacrifice, and the time that is coming will demand much self-effacement from all those souls who are being spiritually starved at present. It won't be any easier than before, 'but unto those who believe, to them will be given power to become the Sons of God.' That text, mother, doesn't mean that those who don't believe will never become the Sons of God; but that they will have to wait longer. Don't let people think that certain souls will never reach the waiting place where I am, and so many of our friends. It's an awful lie, mother, and cruelly unjust to the Almighty God. As we learn more, we take all the irreverence to God and our Master Christ so much more to heart. We seem to understand better how it hurts both those wonderful Spirits, because of the harm men do themselves by that attitude."

SEPTEMBER 1 st

"The teaching given to us now is all to do with the preparations for the new manifestation of God on your earth. Some of it is difficult indeed for us, but I'll try to tell you as much as I can. The principal point now is the union among people of different forms on your plane. At present they are all rigidly opposed to each other, and the whole body of Anglicans and Nonconformists is united in opposing the Roman Catholic Church. That body, so large and so influential, has almost more to learn than any other. We know that it teaches its people to pray for the souls in the spirit world, it has not lost sight of that great truth, as so many other sects have; but in its bitter intolerance of all those outside, the Roman Communion is one of the hardest and most difficult obstacles for us to overcome. Unless that intolerance is broken down, and the broad love of Christ accepted, the Roman Church will not be able to stand in the light of the new revelation. The earth is literally aching for fuller teaching; it will be given it all right, but there is a most overwhelming amount of rubbish to be cleared away. There is good stuff underneath, but at present it is choked with the weeds of false teaching, blind prejudices, and materialism.

"Now there is a small point I want to mention. Don't let anything that people may say about these messages destroy your faith in them, mother. We don't think anything will, but when they are published, people, lots of them, will enjoy digging their knives into you. Never mind if they do, mother, it's natural that they should. Many others will be so thankful that they will want to know much more, but nothing can be told you without permission from God, through our Master Christ."

SEPTEMBER 1st (later)

“All we are taught here is reflected on your plane. That means that the plans of good men for the benefit of others on earth are originated here. It is the case with all good work on your plane, even including books that authors write, and think they are their own compositions, and the same with music and science. Everything on your earth is a reflection of life here, and that makes our world the real one and yours the shadowy one. Most people on the earth at present think it is the other way round. Will you tell everyone that, please, mother, it is an important part of the new revelation. Good deeds are controlled from this side, to a very large extent. I mean, the impulse is sent from this side, and every effort made to induce the soul to carry it out. This is something like what is called the voice of conscience on your plane, you think, mother? Well, you’re right; it’s just what it is; a definite method pursued over here, and not that rather indefinite shadowy thing you call conscience. It’s the same with the evil on earth. There is always a fight going on between the good forces and the Blacks, on both planes, and that will go on until men on the earth have learnt the meaning of Christianity, as the Master Christ taught it. We are much interested in this teaching as it is quite new to us, and looking forward to hearing a great deal more about it from this great spirit. You’ve no idea, mother, how full our life is here, and how we enjoy every minute of it. We are never in the Least dull, and our only tiny bit of unhappiness comes from our pity for all souls who are not yet able to come to us. We know that our people on the earth recognize our existence (I’m speaking just now of my special friends), and even those here who have unbelieving friends, know that their attitude is only temporary, and there is so much love here that it makes up to them in a very large degree.

“I have found the Manchester Colonel, and oh, mother, you don’t know how pleased he was when I told him that I had been with him when he died, and that Ids people had been told....”\*

“I think I have got it through all right, mother, but it’s rather more difficult than just talking oneself. Now I will just say a word about the War. It’s hurrying to an end very, very soon now, and the Blacks are simply doubled up with rage. They know that the overthrow of the Germans, means their overthrow for many hundreds of years.”

\*Here followed a message from the Colonel through Tiny. - JESSIE PLATTS.

SEPTEMBER 3rd

“My Master Christ wants people to understand that His manifestation of God when He walked on the earth in the body of the Syrian carpenter, was by no means the first. He wishes it known that many manifestations of God had taken place before His time. He says that if only people would open their eyes and take in that truth and believe, it would make the other parts of the teaching so much easier for them.

“All the ancient nations shared in it, and many of the names of the teachers specially

chosen by God for that purpose are known on the earth, only people have forgotten all about their real mission. The great Egyptian nation was one of the earliest chosen by God to send a representative, then India, and Persia, and the Grecian nation. The great Jewish teacher, Moses, was one of them, but he came quite late in the world's history. Egypt held much of the mysteries of God's revelation, and many teachers were trained in the schools there. He tells us that Jesus the Carpenter of Nazareth, spent many years there, being trained for the great mission of His life, which was, to house the Mighty Master Christ in his own body, and ultimately to give up his life for the truths that He taught. Will you please tell people this message, mother, whenever you get the chance? This great spirit says it is a very necessary one, because there are very many people on the earth who think that God shewed Himself for the one and only time, in the Holy Land, 2,000 years ago. Raymond and Chris and Stephen say this teaching is new to them, but it does not seem quite so strange to me. Perhaps it is because I have been told a little of my past lives, and as I once lived in Egypt I was probably taught something of the same kind of thing then. Well, now, mother, don't you think this is an awfully interesting message?

("Yes, I do.")

"I thought you would; you make it so easy for me to write now, because you believe what I say, and you seem to understand so well, it makes all the difference to the Clearness and length of the messages."

SEPTEMBER 3rd (later)

"We are told that long faces and gloomy conversations, are the very opposite to what our Master Christ approves. The happier people are, the better they are serving God. Of course, I don't mean the frivolous kind of happiness which consists in tearing about all over the place to find something exciting to do, but the kind of happiness that makes you feel glad inside, mother, and to laugh, and have jokes with people. This isn't a very small matter, though you may think so. When people are gloomy, and miserable, and grouching, they make a kind of thick grey cloud all round them, and no one from this side, who is a legitimate friend of theirs, can get in touch with them. That gloom of theirs makes them a much easier prey to the Black Forces, too, and in a way puts them far away from the Master Christ. Not only that, but it affects other people so much. One gloomy person can infect a whole household like a disease, and then they infect others, and so it goes on. It is everyone's dear duty to be as happy as they can, even when earthly things are looking their blackest. This applies very much to people who are sorrowing for their friends in the spirit world. If they only knew how utterly miserable they can make souls here by such selfish sorrow, and so-called 'mourning,' they would stop it at once, and put on the brightest clothes they could, and burn those awful, awful, black things. I was so glad you never wore mourning for me, mother, and do your best to influence people. This is all part of the preparation for the manifestation of Christ, and is not a frivolous message by itself; I am not allowed to send anything through but by permission of

the Master Christ.”

SEPTEMBER 4th

“The teaching which the Master Christ wishes to be told to people on your plane. Just now it is on the question of the validity of the sacraments. That’s a very difficult point to explain, but I’ll do the best I can. In the first place the old orthodox teaching that the sacraments were absolutely necessary for ‘man’s salvation,’ as the Church phrased it, is quite wrong, and the idea contained in the words ‘man’s salvation,’ wrong too. Evolution is the proper word to use, and that is accomplished by man himself. The particular sacrament which the Master Christ has commanded me to talk about this morning, is the one you call the Holy Eucharist. The present view as held by a large number of Christians on your plane, is, that Jesus Christ, as they say, thinking of Him as one person, when there were really two distinct personalities concerned, ordained that particular rite and commanded it to be used in memory of Him, with certain words attached to it, making it compulsory for every orthodox Christian to obey His injunctions. Well, mother, it’s an utterly wrong interpretation of a very simple well-known Jewish custom. The service, as it has become, is not in the least ‘necessary to man’s evolution,’ but as it has become so firmly fixed in the minds of really devout people on your earth, it is not suggested that it should be discontinued at present. Only the Master Christ wishes it most distinctly understood, that there is no stigma attached to anyone who does not attend that service, and that the system of ‘refusing communion’ is just a bogey set up by the priests, to keep their authority over the people, to whom they profess to teach the truths of Christianity. We are told over here that that particular service with the conditions attached to it, has been a source of wonderful strength to many souls on your plane; that’s all to the good, and nothing can be said against it, but it is one of the barriers which will have to be broken down in the face of the new revelation; I want to make that clear, mother. It means that at present, it is one of the rites of the Church on which the Roman Catholics lay the most stress, and on which they are most prejudiced. We are told here that many Romish priests would utterly condemn their people if they attended that particular service in an Anglican church, and received the ‘elements,’ as they are called, from the priest at the altar, and vice versa. Well, all the bitter, ignorant intolerance must go, and both parties must understand that forms and ceremonies, creeds and customs, are completely valueless in themselves;\* the one thing that matters, for every sect and every nation on the earth, is the love of God for man, as shewn on the earth so very many times in different ways, and last and mightiest of all, by our Master Christ. That is what this message is for particularly, mother, to bring home to every denomination of the followers of Christ, the brotherhood that should exist among them, especially in the question of worship. The Master Christ wants people to realize that there must be differences of opinion on many most important points for many a long day to come, and although it may not be possible to obtain uniformity of teaching (which will be a fact some day) yet there may be unity. We on this side are so surprised at the bitterness of

religious feeling on your plane. Of course I never thought about it in my earth life, but I can see it now. To us it is so simple; just the love of the Master for us, and our love for Him. When people have come to that tremendous knowledge there will no longer be wars on the earth. To that end we are working here, and these messages are sent as part of the preparation.

\* In later messages Tiny enlarges on this subject of the Holy Eucharist, and to some extent qualifies the above statement - JESSIE PLATTS.

#### SEPTEMBER 5th

“We are learning much about the causes of dissension among religious sects on your earth, and are surprised to find what importance each one attaches to some quite unimportant detail. Some people even consider it wrong to make the sign of the cross, or to wear round their necks that most mysterious symbol of a still more mysterious matter. I can't tell you anything more about that at present, but perhaps I shall be allowed to later on. Then, you know, there is so much diversity and widespread jealousy, even among those who set out to convert the so-called heathen. By the way, many of those people called heathen could give many of the sects points in the things of the spiritual life! Well, that is all to be altered before the new revelation can fully develop. Then we learn that the theory of reincarnation will be a bitter pill for some of the orthodox Christians, because they can see no further than that they have to go through the same kind of earth life over and over again, for no particular purpose. They will have to accept it, but will you explain, mother, whenever you get the chance, what a wise law the plan of partial reincarnation is. Some of them have only heard of it in its debased forms, and think they may some day live again in the body of an animal. That's absolutely untrue.

Evolution never goes back. It may be very slow and even retarded for a time, but it's always going forward, and not going backward. Tell them that between each life there is usually a long wait in the spirit world. People fight the idea, partly because, they think they might have to re-incarnate almost at once, and so might not come in touch with all the friends whom they have loved, for hundreds of years; that's not it at all, can't you see how unkind such a plan would be, and how unlike the Almighty God's love for them? Tell them to use their common sense and think for themselves. Don't be controlled by unlearned and prejudiced writers of certain theological works.

#### SEPTEMBER 6th

“There will be much searching of heart among the people on your plane before that wonderful manifestation of God is fully known. All sorts of objections will be raised as to the possibility of the Master Christ working among men, as He did before. All sorts of theories will be advanced to explain away the necessity for such a manifestation; that's one side. On the other are thousands of intelligent souls, whether devout or otherwise, who plainly see the burning necessity for more

teaching, and for much more light. What the world was capable of receiving 2,000 years ago, is but as a drop in the ocean, to what it is able to absorb now. People are sick to death of shams, and of forms and ceremonies, with no life in them, but there is much to do yet by way of preparation. We are watching your earth with such interest just now, and we are allowed to add our tiny bit of spiritual influence too. We were so awfully glad when the Master said our help was wanted. We knew the more advanced spirits were working tremendously hard, but we did not think we deserved the privilege, we have yet so much to learn. That's just another instance of the wonderful kindness of our Master; but, of course, He wouldn't have given permission out of kindness alone. He had to know of our progress and of our longing to work for Him. This is only a short message to-day as there is a special bit of work waiting for me, and I am being called."

SEPTEMBER 7th

"We are taught now of the responsibility that rests on everyone regarding his own evolution. Each person makes progress according to his own capabilities and perceptions. No one has anyone to blame but himself for his failure to advance. Always remember that the cause of failure may have had its origin in a very long past. When once the old forgotten teaching of previous existences, is fully understood and believed, by the masses, it will be a most tremendous help to them in their struggles on earth now. It will be a very strong incentive to do the best they can for themselves, and for other people. That truth once grasped, will alter the present conditions of things enormously. Can't you see it, mother? You will learn to be independent of outside help, and will realize what a much bigger thing it is to rule oneself than be ruled by other people. That's my message this morning, mother. 'Better is he that ruleth himself than one that taketh a city.' My teacher, Frank of Oxford, is here with me now, and has suggested that text to me, as a support to my message. I don't know much about texts myself, so I thought I had better explain how I came to write it.

"All people who are doing their daily work as well and as cheerfully as they can, with the love of the Master in their hearts, are on the upward path, whether they live in a hovel or a palace. Distinction of class makes no difference.

Only, those who have had to struggle most desperately hard against any conceivable kind of material discomfort and misery, and come triumphantly through the ordeal, are welcomed with so much joy when they come over here. And you know, even if people have struggled and fallen again and again, it counts towards their evolution in their next earth life, always supposing that the motive for their action was pure."

SEPTEMBER 8th

"The different ways in which the manifestations of God have been shewn to people on the earth, have never been exactly the same in method, but the real teaching was always the same, for those who had eyes to see and ears to hear. At one time the

Teacher would bear as the keynote of His messages some virtue, like purity, and another time Light would be the symbol. Always there was the teaching adapted to the times and development of the people concerned. Now it will surely be 'in the fullness of time.' Much there is to tell people now of widespread forgotten truths. They have all been told before, but have faded from the minds and memories of man. Nothing in the new manifestation is really new at all; it is only the real interpretation of the worship of the Almighty God, and the great love of the Master Christ for all souls on your plane.

"He has been given particular charge of that part of the Universe. That's another thing that people will have to learn: that your earth is only a very small part of the whole scheme of creation. Most people don't know that; they think that God's power and love only concerns them. Well, they are mistaken again. Much of this teaching has appeared in books already on the earth, but only a few Of the educated egos have come into touch with it. The Master Christ wants everybody to know all about it now, and that is why it is coming in this very simple form - through these messages which I have been allowed to send."

SEPTEMBER 9th

"About the necessity for ever so much more charity among men on the earth. I don't mean the Sunday collection money, or giving large subscriptions to different objects, but the charity that always tries to see the best in people, and not the worst. So much harm is done by people who are always picking holes in others' characters, they seem to take a real pleasure in saying and thinking spiteful things. That's a tremendous hindrance to all spiritual progress. Will you try to explain that to people, mother? Many of them do it from pure thoughtlessness, others because they put the unkind remarks in a funny way, and people laugh at them. Both are to blame, and so are those who listen and laugh. Such cruel harm and lifelong injury, has been done to perfectly innocent persons, by unkind and spiteful suggestions. Then there is the want of truthfulness, too, among so many. That's a bad fault, too, mother. It exists from the highest down to the lowest. Politicians lie, in order to gain what they imagine would be a benefit to themselves; of benefit to their country they often fail to think. The business man will lie to obtain a contract, and call it good business. The working man will lie to his employer, and the servant to the mistress. Fear is at the bottom of all lying, mother, and its twin-brother, selfishness. Get rid of those two evils, and your world will have taken a big step forward towards receiving the new manifestation. The selfishness of the individual, means the selfishness of the community, and that, in the end, leads to the downfall of nations.

"What is wanted is the love of Christ, and how hard that seems to be for people to understand."

SEPTEMBER 10th

"We are learning now that the majority of men on the earth are more or less

agnostics. This really means that they have realized how utterly illogical and unsatisfactory, so much of the orthodox Church teaching is. They are more honest than those who continue to profess Christianity, and miserably fail to live up to the standard of the example of Christ.

“To the former these messages will appeal much more than to the latter. They will welcome the teaching which lets in the light, and does not hesitate to point out the many mistakes of the orthodox party. Much of their orthodoxy is a matter of custom, and inability to judge or think, for themselves. If they even sat down for five minutes every day, and just seriously gave their minds to it, they would very soon know how much of the doctrine, as practised in so many churches and chapels on earth to-day, is utterly incapable of acceptance. But they don't do that; they are afraid; and so they continue in the old worn-out grooves, and bitterly oppose any suggestion of a wider interpretation. The agnostics have more sense in a way. They recognize the childishness and futility of so much of the doctrine, and in their passionate resentment against being treated as if they had no intelligence at all, they deny much that is fundamentally true, and are left, so to speak, without an anchor - for the time being. Such people are most difficult to convince, but, that accomplished, they are most faithful servants of the Almighty God.”

SEPTEMBER 11th

“We learn here the duty of looking after those people who have much difficulty in taking care of themselves. I mean the poor souls who crowd the prisons of the world.

The present system is terribly harsh, and very often most unjust. There is one law for the rich and another for the poor, in practice, if not in theory. Men of influence and position, often get much lighter sentences than poor men, though the offences and consequences may have been identical. Money is the cause. Payments can be made to the officials, and offenders escape scot free. That will have to be altered before the way of the Master is known to all. Then again, punishing crime committed, isn't the way to purge the world of crime. Sometimes it makes a man worse than before, especially if he is very young. The youth of the nation should be made the first care of the state. There should be ample opportunities for education, time for play, and amusement for all, healthy homes, and no child workers. Much of the crime comes from the upbringing and terrible surroundings of the poor souls concerned. We know that this present low stage of development, and consequent capacity for wrong-doing, is a result of previous existences and retarded evolution, but that is no reason why they should not be helped in the wisest possible way by egos who are higher up in the scale of evolution. It is the duty of those egos to help the backward ones; reformatories and prisons are poor helps to that end. The root of almost all the crime, lies in the misery of the hovels they call homes. This refers to the ordinary type of man in prison to-day; I am not speaking now of crimes committed by highly advanced and educated egos. There is another terrible fault in the present system, certainly in England. When a man has been in prison it is never forgotten, but

always remains a brick to be thrown at him, at any time. It is often impossible for a man to be given the chance of earning an honest living, when he comes out of gaol, though he is burning with desire to make good. That being so, there is nothing for him to do but to act dishonestly again, and with the former consequences - back to prison and with less hope than before, in God, or man. When a man has been punished for an offence, it should not be remembered against him; he should be given every possible chance to retrieve the past. He should be able to feel that men will trust him, and that he is not regarded as a pariah, because he had fallen, and had to go through the punishment prescribed by the law of the land. Capital punishment is the worst form of all, because of the terrible effect it has upon the soul in the spirit world. Some may say 'What is the difference between that and death in battle?' This: one is the brutal way of paying for one person's death by killing the author of it; the other is the death of a soldier fighting for an ideal of honour and patriotism, though perhaps from a mistaken point of view. Well, I've tried to make the message clear this morning, but it was rather a difficult one. The Master Christ is full of sympathy for the evil-doers on your plane, and one of the points of the new revelation will be the way to prevent them from becoming evildoers."

SEPTEMBER 12th

"All of you on the earth now must bear in mind that the manifestation of God on earth as shewn by our Master Christ for the second time, is a wonderful privilege. It has never happened before that the same Teacher appeared twice, though some have thought so. But this time is so utterly unlike any of the others, in its crying need for salvation, that the Almighty God is sending once more the very Holiest Spirit in all the Universe, the One standing closer to Him than any other. This time His work will begin in the West (as I have told you before it has really begun now) and afterwards spread all over the world. There will be nothing of selection of race or creed, the message will be given to every soul in every corner of the earth. Not that everyone will believe now, but many more will than last time. Those who do not believe will retard their evolution - for a very long time indeed, and it will mean very many more earth lives for them. They will be given plenty of time to absorb the new teaching, the Master's work won't be finished in a few months. And those who do acknowledge the reality of His teaching, will have speeded up their evolution tremendously. We do not know if all those who accept Him will have finished then with earth life, but we do know that their faith will lessen the number of their future incarnations. Many of those souls who are looking out for Him and longing to be taught by Him, are such old souls, mother, though of course they don't know it. You are an awfully aged person really, and so is Jack."

SEPTEMBER 13th

"Many people will wish they had thought more of spiritual things when they recognize the truth of the new teaching. My message is to tell those people that their work now won't be helped by regrets for the past; that is finished with - for the time

being - and the one thing for them to do, is to believe the truths which are conveyed to them, through these messages. Be sure you make everyone understand, mother, that these messages are not my own inventions, but direct teaching of the Master through me to you; how it is conveyed to me I am not allowed to explain to you yet. These remorseful people can make themselves very unhappy by their regrets for the past, but that is wrong - and won't help them - on the contrary will make it harder for them. They must turn their backs on their old connections, and open their understanding. Much trouble will be caused by the priests of all denominations, because so many of them should never have been priests at all, and are totally unfitted by nature, to train other souls. They will see all the old landmarks slipping away from them, and their authority over the people dwindle to nothing. It will mean a most tremendous sifting of the clergy on your plane, of all sects and in all countries. Not all of them by any means are worthy to be called the priests of God, and to them the new teaching will be a stumbling-block and rock of offence. History will again repeat itself, but with not quite the same results; the people are awake now, and will begin to reason things out for themselves. On the other hand there are many faithful servants of the Master on the highest spiritual lines among the priests on the earth. Many of these men have been searching for fuller truth all their lives, and will be, beyond measure, filled with thankfulness, that the time for wider teaching is actually upon them. They will have much to bear up against, especially those among them who do not hold very high positions in the Church. It will amount to persecution for some, because the heads of the Church, the bishops, are at present desperately ignorant of all that the Master really taught, and desperately prejudiced against any outlook, but the narrow conventional one, of the orthodox Christians.

“My message is to tell those faithful priests who may suffer very material loss for their faith in the new revelation, that always there stands beside them, a great army of helpers from this side, and ever present is the love and understanding of the Master. He wants them to know how He appreciates their devotion to the Truth, and their willingness to serve Him, and will you please say that He will certainly shew Himself to many of these men.

“Those who doubt Him will lose something more valuable than they can hope to understand, till they come over on this side. And will you also say, mother, that much remains for everyone to do to prepare His way; there isn't very much time left now before the whole earth will be moved to the very depths. Tell them to work at their various duties on earth as well as they can; not to neglect those for contemplation of spiritual things; that would be wrong. But they must mix their contemplation of spiritual things in with the wear and tear of material life, and then all work will be hallowed, and much easier to do.”

SEPTEMBER 13th (later)

“I only want to tell you that my work is in the battlefield again. I'm there almost always now just fighting like I used to do with my old regiment, and helping all I

can.”

“It does seem queer.”)

“Yes, doesn’t it, but quite natural, too, my love for my men and my country didn’t cease when that German bullet put an end to my earth life, and I was pleased when the order came that I was to work on your plane for a bit. I often nip over and have a look at you, mother; I came the other day when you were lying asleep on your bed.”

“I dreamed I talked to you and clutched you.”)

“You were not wrong either, mother, you did grab hold of me, and I was so glad to see you and talk to you.”

SEPTEMBER 14th

“The Master Christ wants it known that when the manifestation of God is fully accomplished, when men have received the new teaching in their hundreds of thousands, He will still remain on the earth for a very considerable length of time, so that everyone will have the chance of seeing and hearing Him in various forms and ways. When He came before it was to a certain nation alone; the fulfilment of His teaching He left to others to carry out, and on. He had to come back to the spirit world with much untold that will be known this time. Even the little that He did tell people then, was enough to raise violent controversies and discussions, almost directly they were left to themselves. Not through any fault of the teaching, but through the unspirituality of the early Christians, and the false interpretation of so much that was quite plain and simple to understand. Now, when the new revelation is taken in by the multitudes, though there will still be bitter strife and quarrelling, yet the majority of the people will be so thankful for a conception of God which they know to be true, and the enormous power of our Master’s love, that they will overthrow those who disbelieve, and take no notice of them or their teaching. When the Master is fully occupied with His work of reconstruction on your plane, there will be a wonderful feeling of security on the earth. Men won’t know what it means, they will think it is because the awful War is over and the strain lifted, but it will really mean the power of the personality of the Master Christ. Among other things men will notice that the manners of different classes in society are not quite the same; there will be no undue dignity on the one side, and no undue familiarity on the other. I can’t explain it very well, mother, but what I want to say is that everyone will instinctively feel a desire to be as courteous, and gentle, as he can. Men don’t realize yet what a difference a little true politeness makes in dealing with their neighbours. Lots of small things like that will shew the perception, all unknown though it may be to some, and even if known, perhaps disregarded, of the power of a perfectly holy Person in their midst. Not all men will either hear Him or see Him, but the teaching will be given to all. The whole universe is looking out for a New Teacher; and the whole earth will know Him too very soon.”

SEPTEMBER 14th (later)

“I know you didn’t call me, mother, but I thought I would come over and have a short talk with you.”

(“You don’t need telling how glad I am to see you!”)

“No, I don’t. I know that well enough. Do you know, I have been having a most interesting time lately; I’m almost always with the men at the Front, just fighting like the rest, and I’m not the only one from this side either, who is fighting too. Hundreds of us are there, and my old men, and my colonel, and my major, and ever so many of my friends. We were so thankful to be allowed to help, and how we work! We just plug into the men for all we’re worth all the spiritual force we can, and we know what an enormous help it is to them. They are doing things now which would have been utterly impossible a few weeks ago. And have you noticed how much less severe our casualties are? That’s another sign of help from our side, though perhaps the men at Headquarters don’t know it. And we are to go on helping till the Germans are finished, and that won’t be for a little time longer, but it has begun. Don’t let people forget that this war is a fight to the death between the good powers and the Black Forces, not merely a war of nations upon the earth. Well now I must get back to my men. We may have something very wonderful to say presently.”

SEPTEMBER 15th

“I’m here, mother. My message will not be a very long one this morning as I have so much to do in France just now. The Master Christ wants it known on your plane that the preparations for His manifestation of the Almighty God are very nearly complete. We know here that that means a very speedy end to the War, because He could not do His wonderful work on your earth while men’s hearts were inflamed with rage against one another, and whose one idea was to kill as many of their fellow-creatures as possible. It has had to be done, but the world has learnt its lesson, thank God, and now remains the mighty task of reconstruction, both of material and spiritual things. Many superstitions of different kinds of worship have had their uses in the past, but now they are finished with. All helps to worship have been necessary from time to time, but now men will team to stand by themselves.

“My message does not mean that the ritual of services will be done away with all at once, and the people left entirely cut off from all they have been accustomed to, but that the real explanations will be given of all that at present is mechanical and parrot-like, and yet at the same time, binding, on orthodox members of the Christian Church, and all will know the real value of much that is childish and ignorant superstition,

“My Master’s wisdom foresees much heart-burning and much strife in consequence of the publication of these messages, but His command is that they be spread broadcast among the people, and publishing is the only means to that end. The great truths of active life in the spirit world, of retaining one’s own personality, of many dividing places on this side for the many types of souls in all stage, of development,

the fact that we in the spirit world are not formless ghosts but living men with real bodies, the certainty of recognition among those who have loved each other on earth, together with the great long-forgotten (at least in the West) truth of pre-existence, and the unalterable law that we pay for our wrong-doing ourselves, are points which must be brought home to every living soul. Well, mother, that's all for the present. I think my messages about the teaching are nearly finished for the first little book, but I am told that I shall be given much more teaching to pass on to you a little later on."

SEPTEMBER 16th

"Now for my last message about the teaching which my Master Christ wants known on your earth. It is this: "Tell my people that I come to help them in their hour of dire necessity. Tell them to have faith in the words of these messages sent by My servant, Tiny, through the hand of his mother. My work will be to teach men the real truth of union with God, and communion with those who have left the earth, and are alive in the spirit world. Tell them I come to teach them that death of the body on earth, is but the birth into spirit life; there is no break, no loss, only apparent separation. Tell them I come to do away with an idea of atonement by blood, for another person's sins. Tell them I come to make them realize the love of God, and to rid the world of the thought of connecting punishment or anger, with that most wonderful Being. Tell them I come to give them Light, real, burning, vivifying Light. Tell them to watch for My coming. Tell them to keep their lamps burning, and be ready to listen, and believe.'

"Will you remember that this is the Master's message, mother, and my last word about the teaching for the present?"

"My love, mother. Tiny, rest now."

## Part II

SEPTEMBER 16th

("Are you here, Tiny?")

"Yes, mother, I've come for a minute. Don't think you won't hear from me any more now that the messages about the teaching, for publication, have ceased for a time. I've got lots to say and I shall come just the same. You don't know how splendid it is for me that you can write, mother, because you know I'm really here in the room with you. When I talk I don't just send a thought message, I come myself, and you'll see me soon. When I am in the room with you, I generally stand close to your little chair, the one you always use, and put my left hand on your shoulder while you write, and if anyone comes with me they stand a little way back till I've finished and then they come closer, and I stand back. Will you write for Stephen now, mother, he wants to talk to you so much? All right, and I'll stay too; I shall just sit on the chesterfield and watch you."

“I can’t see you, darling.”)

“No, you can’t, mother, but I can see you, and you’ll be clairvoyant before very long; but there’s no hurry. Now let Stephen write; he’s getting quite impatient! \*

\* A long message came through from Stephen. He had communicated several times before. Stephen is a friend of my girlhood. - JESSIE PLATTS.

SEPTEMBER 17th

“I’m here, mother; I came like lightning when I knew you were ready to write for me. That’s one of the wonderful things of spirit life, the quickness with which we can travel when we’re wanted. I was miles away from you, mother, but your thought reached me, and here I am in the drawing-room with you.

“All my principal work is in France now; you’ve no idea of the naturalness of it, mother. Of course, we don’t suffer any discomforts and are in no bodily danger, but apart from that we are sharing in everything, just as we did when we were wearing our physical bodies. So many of the older ones are there too. We saw Roberts and Kitchener the other day, holding a most animated conversation. It ought to help people awfully on the earth to know that we are doing this work. That ought to make them understand that we are no ghosts ‘Ghosts’ What a beastly word - and so hard on us! We are men, men, men, doing men’s work, and doing it all as service to the Master Christ. The Blacks are crowding the earth now and doing all they can to hurt us and our men, but their day is passing when they can do much harm to the Allies. The Germans had better take heed to the possible attacks by the Blacks upon them. I mean that when the Blacks are utterly defeated in the bodies of the German troops, they may turn and rend the very people they have been helping. That would mean civil war and the worst kind that has ever appeared on the earth.”

SEPTEMBER 18th

“Still in France with my men and we are making splendid progress. We can see much evil in the German armies. To all of us in the spirit life, evil is something that can be seen, not merely felt, and we see great clouds of horrible grey matter, floating over the German troops. To us that means the power of the Black Forces. There is nothing like that among our men; there are shadowy clouds round them, but there is no hate, or cruelty, or any of the horrible things that surround the Germans. To us the Germans appear so hideous that we can hardly bear to look at them. That means that we can really see the evil incarnate in their bodies. Of course no one on the earth plane can see that in the ordinary way - but some can, who are powerful clairvoyants. We work among our men with all our might, and do you know, mother, we think that some of the old padres out there, are getting an inkling of something happening, not quite usual. We hope they will think more and more of these unusual happenings, and remember to tell the people at home.”

SEPTEMBER 19th

“Raymond and I are quite near each other and we often compare notes. We are so proud of our respective regiments, and we do so want to be allowed to stay with our men to the end. We are quite sure that they are realizing that there is a Power behind them. Sometimes we can hear them saying things like this, ‘Never thought we could do it,’ ‘My men are simply magnificent,’ ‘Look at the colonel, he must have a charmed life.’ And then from the men, ‘Well, boys, let’s give ‘em hell, and no quarter,’ ‘Remember the Lusitania,’ ‘Remember Belgium,’ ‘Don’t be afraid of anything on two legs that calls itself a German,’ ‘One Englishman is equal to six Germans and no going back on that.’ All sorts of remarks reach us that shew the tendency of the thought. The whole tone of the Army has changed, partly because the men know they are really winning, and partly because they have learnt the lesson the War was sent to teach. No man who comes through with his life and limbs, or with his life and perhaps very severe handicaps of the physical body, can ever be the same as he was before. No man who has seen the awful havoc and devastation in France, and Belgium, can ever think of peace until the abominable wickedness of the authors of it all has been punished in the way we know the consequences of their own actions. The Germans have asked for war; they must have it till their very inmost souls shriek for peace, peace at any price, however humiliating, for the sake of the innocent women and children of Germany. Then when Germany has realized the justice of a peace that strips her naked in the eyes of the world, then, and only then, can anything be done to restore the egos of that country to any standard of right feeling and decent morality. There is an awful awakening coming to that nation and its rulers. They - the rulers - are heaping up crime after crime, and what their end will be, we shudder to think. It must mean awful centuries of waiting for forgiveness. Many, many ages of penitence will be needed to wipe out the results of their actions in this generation. We do not know much about it here, but the little we do know makes us realize the inexorable justice of the law of Karma. That’s what some people call it, mother, on the earth; it means the result of actions committed on the earth plane. Perhaps later on I may be permitted to tell you something about the sufferings of those who have to pay such awful penalties that we cannot bear to think of it. Well, now, mother, this isn’t like my messages about the teaching, is it, but it has its uses.”

“Are you still happy, darling?”

“Really happy, mother, and do you know you are beginning to remember more easily.”

“I had such a vivid dream last night, and saw you so plainly.”

“Well, you certainly came over here, and we told you all about it. Of course, part of it was just muddle, but you certainly saw me, and a good many other people. Bruno came and talked to you too, mother. He is such a one to help anybody who wants help, and he knows you are going through a tough time just now. Now I must go.”

“Look out for me to-night. I’ll come if I can.” “Yes, rather. My love. Tiny, rest now.”

SEPTEMBER 20th

“The Manchester colonel makes a very fine worker for the Master. He has come to my part now, and we were so glad to see him. He is working for the present among the rather unhappy people, but not those in the very dark places.

“We are being simply flooded in the spirit world with souls from the battle-fields; very many more of the Germans than our men. Of course, when the souls come over here, their nationality drops from them, so to speak, and they are simply souls to be trained. Some of them are in a most appalling state of revolt against our Master, and everything connected with Him. Some rave and curse, at not being able to get back on the earth to do to others the harm that has been done to them. Not all of them are as bad as that, but very many come over with no hope for themselves, or belief in God. This war and its consequences, will go down to posterity as the most awful result of bad Karma on the earth, that the world has ever seen. Nothing approaching it has ever been known, both for its consequences here, and on your plane. More advanced spirits have told us how they had known of it for many years, and had worked very hard to divert the stream of wickedness. Their efforts have been seen in the way all our Colonies rallied to the support of the Mother-country, and in the sinking of all political differences on the outbreak of war. Only in the small corner of the Empire called Ireland, were their efforts nearly frustrated. Not altogether, but the Blacks are dominating a very large body of Irishmen there, priests and people. We do not think the War will produce much change of heart there, it will mean other and more insular measures. We feel that the Irish question will resolve itself mainly into a religious one, and when the power of the Roman Catholic party is broken there will no longer be much trouble there. The people are priest-ridden, and the priests are fermenting treason for their own ends. Well now I must go, mother; we’ve had a lovely talk, and all I tell you now will be for the public to read some day. When you come over to-night I shall take you to see all my friends. They’ll be looking out for you. My love. Tiny, rest now.”

SEPTEMBER 21 st

“At present we are still fighting and helping our men, they are making most marvellous progress. Surely you people on the earth can see that too?

(“Yes, they do.”)

“Well, and the reason is because of the enormous spiritual strength that is being poured on leaders and men alike. No amount of guns and ammunition could accomplish what is being done without that. The Germans are still so very strong, and absolutely reckless of the lives of their men. That is one of the things of the War which saddens us so; the awful way in which those German soldiers are driven to the slaughter. Affairs in Russia are interesting us too, very much. We see there more evidence of the power of the Black Forces, and the willingness of the Germans to be led by them. The Russians themselves are not nearly so much to blame as some

people think; they have been grossly deceived and betrayed by the men who swore to defend their country, and they in their turn have been betrayed by German guile. Raymond and I often talk of what will happen in Germany when the masses of the people understand the truth. We are not clairvoyant enough to be able to see very much, but we do know it will spell ruin and shame of the ruling house. Raymond thinks that the only hope for Germany lies in her absolute defeat at the hands of the Allies. We are so much interested and we can see what an immense amount of work there will be for us to do to help in reconstruction after the War. Do you know, mother, what reconstruction will involve?

("Yes, a little.")

"It means complete revolution of much that was considered indispensable, and many inequalities will have to be adjusted. First and foremost, women will stand on the same level as men, mentally, politically, socially, and morally. That will mean revision of certain laws, of our land, anyhow, as they are at present. Wages will be higher, but the equivalent in work must be forthcoming. Profiteering - or blood money as it might well be called - will be done away with, and much more money spent on educating the children of the State. All these reforms will take a long time to bring into effect, and won't be accomplished without much trouble and painstaking self-denial on the part of the reformers. All of those men will be given much help from the Master, who, it must be remembered, will be working on the earth then. What a different world it will be, mother, when all this is accomplished, and how much we long to see the fruits of the efforts of many earnest-minded men and women who are labouring now to bring them about. Well, now I must go. My love, Tiny, rest now, and don't forget that you come over every night now and have long talks with me and my friends. You're going to remember it all soon."

SEPTEMBER 21 st (6 o'clock)

"Now will you just write this for me. I'm not with my men tonight, and perhaps I shall not be there to-morrow. I'm back in my beautiful home in the spirit world, there was a piece of work the Master wanted me to do for Him there. Will you remember, mother, that I am really with you when you are writing."

("Are you here now?")

"Yes, I am, mother, I've got my khaki uniform on, and I'm just exactly by your chair touching your shoulder. You're not feeling scared, are you, mother?"

("Not a bit, darling.")

"That's splendid for me, you'll be allowed to see me soon, and you'll be so glad, and so shall I. Only don't let the idea of becoming clairvoyant bother you, mother, it's a perfectly natural development for you, nothing will be allowed to hurt you or frighten you."

("Tiny darling, I simply ache to come over to you.")

“Yes, I know you do, mother, but you’ll come when you’ve finished your work on the earth plane and that won’t be for a long while yet, as you count time. And you have Jack to think of; he would be awfully alone if both you and I were in the spirit world now. When your work is done the Master will call you, and I shall come and meet you, and so will Stephen, and ever so many of my friends here who have learnt to love you though they never knew you in this earth life. And, mother, don’t forget that you do come to me at night, and we have such a good time, and we laugh just like we used to, and you are so glad to know for yourself how really happy I am, and how busy, and not a bit changed. You’re changed much more than I am in a way, mother, and yet you’re exactly the same! Doesn’t that sound rot? But it really means that the inner self of you shews more now, and that makes you look a little different. Don’t be in the least unhappy, mother, we are together you know, and when you really remember you’ll be so thankful. Now I must go. My love. Tiny, rest now.”

SEPTEMBER 22nd

“My teacher, Frank of Oxford, tells me that I am developing very fast on the spiritual line. That means I am getting more able to absorb the wonderful teaching we are having here, and shall be better able to pass it on to you when I am allowed. Not many of us are given permission to write as freely to their friends as I am allowed to do in my present stage of development, and I am so very grateful to our Master for giving me the privilege. It made an enormous difference to me when I was able to get in touch with you. It was so jolly to be able to tell you how really happy I was, and all about my work. And I always get your answers, mother, almost before you’ve thought them, certainly before you’ve had time to say them, or write them. It is one of the wonderful things here that, though we do talk like anything, it is not necessary to use ordinary speech, we can communicate with others by thought alone. Raymond, and I, and Stephen, sometimes sit together for a long time holding long conversations and enjoying ourselves hugely, without saying a word! It’s funny, mother, isn’t it, but awfully jolly too. And people don’t misunderstand one, you never have to explain that you meant something quite different, or that you didn’t mean what the other chap thought you did. Well, mother, I must be getting back to my work. Don’t forget that Tiny is just as happy as he can possibly be, and wants all his friends to know it. My love, rest now.”

SEPTEMBER 23rd

“We are still being taught, by great spirits from higher planes, of the results of the false teaching of the priests on the earth. Not only are they of the Anglican Church responsible, but all those of all countries; there is blame attached to every one of them. We do not quite understand how the mistakes originated, but it is being explained to us and we shall get the hang of it, so to speak, before very long. It seems to be mixed up with the state of development of the people, at the time of our Master’s manifestation in Palestine, with the efforts of the Black Forces to distort and falsify His teaching. Be that as it may, there is no excuse for much of the error

that has spread through all denominations. Much of it has certainly been due to pride of intellect, and overwhelming desire on the part of the priests to govern the people, and keep them in subjection. Then they used their power to terrify those ignorant souls, and demanded large sums of money from them, and gifts of property, and so built up a very large amount of material wealth, all of which was most distinctly opposed to the clear teaching of our Master Christ. We see here how all this coming down from the long ago, has gradually brought about the discredit in which the Church stands to-day. Well, she's got another chance, and it is up to her to make the most of it.

"When I came back from my work in France I went to see some of my friends who are not yet with me, but who are not very far off, and I told them all about the progress of the War. Some of them were so anxious to know if I would help some of their friends, and I told them of course I would when I went back. You know, mother, practically all souls in the spirit world retain a certain recollection of things on the earth plane, and always they remember those they love, and are conscious of the atmosphere round them. Some of them are very miserable sometimes, because of the danger their friends are in, but I always tell them that nothing can harm their real bodies, only their physical bodies may have to suffer. Many of them are anxious for their friends to know more of the conditions of life in the spirit world. They have been told about these messages which I have been allowed to send, and they are so anxious that very many people should read them. Now I must go. My love, mother. Tiny, rest now."

SEPTEMBER 24th

"I'm here, mother, waiting to write. I'm just by Your chair and touching your shoulder."

("I can't see you yet.")

"I know you can't, but it won't be long before you are able, you are on the edge now."

("I shall be so glad.")

"Yes, I know you will, and so shall I. I can see you, of course, and touch you, so it isn't so bad for me.

"We are doing a great deal now among those people who are almost ready to come to us. They have worked through their discipline, and now we tell them something of the kind of work they will be given to do. Every person is given the work he is most fitted for, though it may not be what he would choose for himself. It all depends on the Master, He decides it all, and tells the more advanced spirits, and then we pass it on to the waiting souls. There is such joy and excitement as each one leaves that training ground, and comes over to us, all eager to begin his work. Sometimes a soul may be sent down on to your plane to work on the different members of his own family. Sometimes they go to people unknown to them, who want more light, and pour into them as much spiritual strength as they can. At first they are accompanied

by a guide, but later on they can be trusted by themselves. Then from time to time they come back here to tell us how they have managed, and to report to the Master. We are awfully interested in each other's work, and talk about it and compare notes, just as we should on your plane. My teacher, Bruno, says that I shall have permission to tell you most interesting and wonderful things before long."

("Tiny darling, when I see you, will you wear ordinary clothes or your spirit robe?")

"Well, mother, I can't quite tell you now. I expect I shall shew myself to you in my uniform at first, as that would be the most familiar to you, but, you know, all manifestations of that kind that are genuine, are controlled by the Master Christ, and He will send me instructions about that. Anyway, you'll see me and hear me soon, and then you'll feel ever so much happier. When I first came over the thing that worried me more than anything else, was the knowledge that you were missing me so awfully. I knew, by thought, that you were perfectly certain I was still alive, and working, and developing, but I couldn't get to you to tell you that I was really with you just the same. We know here how perfectly terrible it is for mothers when the children come here before them; it is worst of all for them. Before you went to Mrs. Leonard I used to be with you as much as I possibly could, in the room at night, trotting down the town with you - in chapel, and all over the place. Did you ever feel me, mother?"

("Yes, rather.")

"All of us would give anything if we could just tell our people at the first entrance into spirit life that we are really still alive. I soon found I could get to you, and you helped me enormously, mother, by refusing to think of me as finished, and talking about me, and doing all sorts of things to keep me in remembrance."

("Of course.")

"It's all very well to say of course, but there are stacks of mothers who don't, and their poor boys are so awfully unhappy about it. Just imagine how beastly you would feel, if you knew you were alive, and everyone persisted in treating you as a bit of dust blown here, there and everywhere, or else as if you were a lump of clay, put away, and finished with. I only wish those mothers could see their sons' unhappiness - for one minute; they would soon stop their selfish lamentation. We know quite well that the human loss is hard, awfully hard: we don't mean to denounce that; but we do want people on the earth to take a different view of death. If they can't rise to it themselves, at least they might try for the sake of their friends in the spirit world."

SEPTEMBER 25th

"Much that I have to tell you is so wonderful and so utterly unlike what the majority of people on the earth know, that it must come through in little bits, or they would discredit the whole thing, and call you an ingenious fraud, if nothing worse. Our life here is just as real, just as full of duties, and pleasures, and educational advantages, as life on your plane. There are schools of learning here, of all grades, and everyone

must attend one or other of them, if it is needed for their development. You are by no means free of temptation in certain parts of the spiritual world, and there are some very, very sad places indeed, where the soul has to fight its way up, step by step, with infinite labour, and ever present temptation. I have told you something of that, but much more remains to be told of the struggles of some souls to escape from evil, even after they have left the earth, and their physical body no longer exists. There is much more to say about the happiness of others who had worked through on the earth, and still more to say of the wonderful glories of the higher worlds, of which I have been allowed to catch glimpses from time to time. What you have been told in the messages is just a little book for beginners - so to speak - nothing more could come through at the time as we were both of us too undeveloped. We are all waiting to simply pour information through to you, but the Master Christ is holding us back for the present; partly because it is necessary you should become quite strong, and be free of much of the worry of material life that bothers you now. When you are fit, then we shall send the knowledge. Isn't it interesting, mother, to think we are both serving the Master, you on one side, and I on the other?"

SEPTEMBER 26th

"Yesterday I was sent to France again. I was jolly glad to go, and I tried to make my men feel I was back with them. The War is simply galloping to conclusion, mother, and how thankful we are feeling. Do not let the people forget that the real fight is between Good and Evil. It was fought out in the spirit world before it took shape on your earth, and will you please ask them to think over what that really means. Nothing more or less than that our life here is the reality, and yours is the shadow. At the same time the shadowy life on your earth is of the greatest importance, because the ego is sent into a physical body to learn certain lessons that only earth life and conditions could teach, and on the way in which he conducts himself during his earth life, depends his state of advancement in the spirit world. All this sounds curious to you, I expect, mother, but it is most certainly true. We are so interested here in the efforts that so many people are making on the earth to know more of the truth of spirit communication, and the laws that govern it. We never laugh at people's efforts, but sometimes they are funny, mother, you know! We know that the most influential man of science will be ready with something amazing in the way of proof before very long. We may not say more than that, but keep your ears open, mother, and be on the look out for this proof. The Professor was talking about it the other day, and he got wildly excited, and we all felt there was reason for it. You will know before very long, mother, and then a perfect flood of information will be poured through. All the old antiquated notions of the impossibility of people on one side maintaining intercourse with those on the other, will collapse like a soap bubble, and those who fought for them, will bide their heads. The occultists of all races and creeds, will give thanks from the depths of their being. We and you will then have all things in common."

SEPTEMBER 27th

“We can see the despair that, is beginning to close down on the German commanders and their men, and we know it means that their final absolute overthrow cannot be long delayed. We see the beginning of demoralization already, in the frantic efforts of the German Press to hush up the defeats on the West, and to ignore completely the overthrow of the Turks in Palestine. We were so awfully interested in that battle, mother, and Raymond and I paid a visit to the country and had a look round a few days ago. It was a most marvellous sight. Train loads of ammunition, captured convoys destroyed, men and animals mixed up in indescribable confusion. Many of the men were blown to pieces by bombs from our aeroplanes, and the rest stampeded in all directions.\* And then we saw our cavalry heading the fugitives off and barring all egress. And then the gangs of prisoners! What is to be done with all the prisoners in that part of the country is a problem for men on the earth, we are not concerned about that, but we are most tremendously interested in the probable result of this great victory. We liked looking round Nazareth, and so many places that were familiar to us in our scripture lessons at school. You must not think it utterly preposterous that we take such a keen interest in the War on your plane, and that we pay visits to the different theatres of conflict. It’s quite natural, only people don’t know it. The spirit world interpenetrates the material, and so of course we are interested, and then you know so very many men are working on the earth now in their spiritual bodies. Some of the great doctors are working enormously hard, helping all the doctors on your plane to find out the best way of treating the awful wounds some of the poor chaps get, and shewing them how to perform most wonderful intricate surgical operations. They don’t know how much they are being helped, but it’s a fact all the same, and in due time they will be conscious of this spiritual help. And do you know, mother, I came across a friend of mine the other day. He had been killed in the last big fight near Gavrelle, where I was killed last year....

\* Extract from the report of The Times, Special Correspondent (W. T. Massey), dated from the Palestine Headquarters on Sept. 27th, 1918. This was published the following day in the issue of The Times of Sept. 28th, 1918:

“Here and on the Amman road from Es Salt were many evidences of our effective aerial bombing, and dead men, animals, broken guns, and transport had to be cleared from the path.” - JESSIE PLATTS.

“He was quite a nice chap and he was glad to see me here. He was feeling a bit lonely and rather unhappy, so I talked to him a lot, and cheered him up. He said he didn’t mind dying much, only he had so wanted to see the Germans licked. He isn’t with me yet, but he isn’t in a very sad part, only he must be trained in the knowledge of the love of our Master Christ, and the reality of spirit life. That’s the stumbling-block to so many chaps when they come over here, mother. They simply can’t believe they are every scrap as much alive as they were on the earth, and it’s all the fault of the

point of view on your plane. Now and then a soul comes over rejoicing in his freedom from earth restrictions, and just bubbling over with zest for the spirit life, but that doesn't happen often. We are so pleased when a soul of that kind does come - it means a very short training for him, and then immediate work. We know that the world is changing its outlook, and we pray most earnestly that the light will come through, untrammelled by conventional and time-expired views."

SEPTEMBER 28th

"We are learning now to talk to souls who come into the spirit life with little or no knowledge of its conditions. As soon as a soul enters the spirit world, it is met by some of us who are appointed to that duty. We find it very heartrending sometimes, because not all the souls who come over can be taken to a place where they will wake up in pleasant surroundings. So we are taught to encourage and comfort them, and tell them to pray much to the Almighty God and our Master Christ. Every soul who comes over straight from the battle-field has need of the very greatest kindness and sympathy on our part, whatever his future may be, and we are most thankful for the help we get from the higher spirits. Not all of us are appointed to this work. We are told by our teachers who receive the orders from the Master, through a very high spirit indeed. Many of my old men are getting on so well, mother, and will soon be given very definite work to do.

"My colonel and my major are awfully busy in France just now; they have developed into such great workers for the Master. I sometimes have fine talks with many of my friends who were at school with me. Do you remember my telling you about a chap called Fergusson? He is getting on splendidly, and we are so happy to be together. He had been watching for me, he said, and was so glad when I came over. And there is another chap called Barran here, and Stokes who was at school with me in Cambridge, and who was in my regiment. You can't think how splendid it is for us to be together, mother, and when you and Jack come there will be simply nothing left to wish for. Time is not so long here as with you. I don't seem to have been here more than a few days, but how long is it really, mother?"

("Eighteen months.")

"It does not seem anything like so long."

"When the time comes for the Allies to dictate the terms of peace they will be enormously influenced from this side. My love, mother. Tiny, rest now."

SEPTEMBER 29th

"I'm just as busy as I can be, now, mother; I'm here, there, and everywhere, and it's all most exciting and interesting. All my work is given to me by my teacher through the Master Christ, and I am not allowed to choose the bits I would like, but that doesn't matter, I am only too glad to do any bit of work that turns up. Now and then I am sent on quite long journeys through space, to help someone many hundreds of miles away, and then I come back here and have a look at you, and then go on to my

home in the spirit world.

“We are getting some wonderful teaching now, mother, about the meaning of so many of the ceremonies of the churches on earth. I mean the real meaning, as so many of them are simply bare forms and nothing else. If the priests ever knew the secret meanings, they have either forgotten, or ceased to believe in them. Some of the teaching is given us by Bruno and Francis, and some by spirits much more advanced even than those two people. A good deal that I am being taught now would have been utterly incomprehensible to me when I first came over. Some of it relates to the ceremony we call the Holy Eucharist, and it is really very wonderful, mother, quite unlike anything I had ever heard on the earth. We are told that at that service, the Master Christ conveys to all those souls who want the spiritual strength in that way, a very powerful mesmeric tonic, so to speak - a passing from Him to them of some vital current of spiritual force. We are told that this force is communicated to the people through the priests, at the time of consecration, and that the bread and the wine are just symbols of the power - the life-giving force - which is conveyed to the people. This isn't quite the same thing as the orthodox idea of the presence of Christ at that particular service more than at any other, but it is rather more as if some tremendous shaft of lightning power came from the Master's spirituality to others, who needed it and looked for it. At the same time we are most distinctly taught that that spiritual power can be given anywhere, at any time, to the soul who honestly looks for it, and demands it. That particular service is by no means the only medium, and no one is to blame for either not attending it, or for being incapable of expressing the same kind of religious fervour that would have distinguished anyone like Teresa in her last earth life, or anyone else who was drawn that way. Above all things we are taught over and over again, that the life of the soul is dependent upon its love for the Almighty God and the Master Christ. How it sustains that life is a detail of very minor importance.”

SEPTEMBER 30th

“I'm here, mother. My message to-day is about my work in the spirit world. Now and then we come across a soul who is worn out with life on the earth, and who is thankful to have finished with it. These people are not the men who have been killed in battle, but either men or women who have had much trouble on the earth, or have seen all their friends come over before them. These people are almost always followers of the Master Christ, but sometimes they are simply very weary souls who are looking forward to a limitless rest. And these people do rest for a long time, because that is the right kind of treatment for them. Souls can get tired, you know, mother, apart from the physical body.”

OCTOBER 1 st

“I'm here, mother. Well, what do you think of the War news this morning! Didn't I tell you some days ago that the War was rushing to an end? Now you can see it for yourself. We are most intensely interested on this side, and I may tell you that

another of the combatant nations will capitulate almost directly and then a third will follow. The end is in sight, mother, though there will still be very fierce fighting on the Western front.

“Just now I am spending a good deal of time with people who are not ready to acknowledge the truth of life in the spirit world. They are the dreamers I mentioned to you before, and they take a most tremendous’ lot of waking up! When they come over they simply say ‘Oh yes, thank you very much, but you’re greatly mistaken! I’m certainly not dead, only asleep, and shall wake up presently and know it all for a dream.’ Some of them get rather annoyed, and tell me to mind my own business. It’s no use telling them that that is just what I am doing! So they have to be left a good deal to themselves. When I am allowed I take a journey to the East to see how matters are progressing there, and find it jolly interesting. Lots of times I’ve been with Jack when he’s been out on patrol duty, and I know I’ve helped him more than once. I’m beginning to remember a little of my past lives now, mother, and a good deal of the work that I am doing in the East has been done by me and Jack together before. When I was a Roman soldier, so was Jack, and we went through many a stiff fight together. And later on we were soldiers again, and in Palestine, and that makes the present campaign there so full of interest to me, because you see, mother, I know all the places! They don’t seem to have altered much in a good many parts. Of course there were no railways when I was there before, but we fought the same old Turks and Arabs. And when I go to Mesopotamia, too, it all seems familiar ground.”

OCTOBER 2nd

“Now for a bit of talk about myself.” (“Tiny darling, I’m just aching for you.”)

“All right, mother, don’t be unhappy; I’m here in the room with you just the same as I always was, and with my old uniform on. I’m touching your shoulder, mother, and just loving you a most tremendous lot.”

(“I’m sorry, old man, it was just - ”)

“Yes, I know, mother, don’t bother to tell me. Now I’ll talk about my life and my work.

“All our teaching now is on the great question of the real meaning of the sacraments of the Church. Both of those which the Anglican and the Roman Church set such store by, the Holy Eucharist, and the Baptism of all professedly Christian people, are the two which will be the cause of the greatest controversy in the new revelation. So much that I have to tell you about these two ceremonies may be unintelligible to you, but I’ll try to explain as well as I can. To begin with, both of them will cease to be absolutely necessary to salvation, and that is where the difficulty will come in. But in spite of it the real meaning must be taught, and gradually will be accepted. The first thing to be done is to shake the orthodox people from the point of view ‘the faith once delivered to the saints.’ Get them to acknowledge that development is possible in that direction as well as in any other, and what was once more than enough to

satisfy the struggling souls on earth, is very insufficient food indeed now. Where the priests and people are enlightened enough to realize the necessity of advancement, it will be easier. Well, then, the Holy Eucharist is a means to an end for some souls at present and it is quite true that at that particular service there is a very great outpouring of spiritual power from the priest to the people, if both of them are tuned to give and receive it. By that I mean, the priest should be filled with the knowledge of that spiritual power and not concerned with his own way of interpreting the service; and the congregation should be prepared to acknowledge the power. It very, very seldom happens in anything like the fulness of which it is capable: very few people are sufficiently spiritual and selfless enough to benefit by it. To those souls who are capable of accepting it, it is a benefit, but not necessarily a service to be forced on every soul. As I told you before, that great spiritual force can be given at any time and in any place to the soul who is seeking it. And will you please say, mother, that it is an untrue and bitterly intolerant thing, to say that the power can only come from that service when it is performed in an Anglican, Greek or Roman Church, and that all people who attend the Nonconformist places of worship on your plane, are debarred from receiving that strength, because the officiating priest has not been ordained by a bishop. It is one of the narrow-minded prejudices which will have to go. The question of the particular power held by an ordained priest because of that ordination, is another of men-made bogeys. Can you imagine the Master Christ in His infinite love for all souls of whatever denomination, countenancing such an arbitrary unjust distinction? It is one of the great causes of bitterness between the Church and Nonconforming bodies. And the question of Baptism demands much explanation. It is an old, old rite, going back thousands of years before the manifestation of our Master for the first time. There is no question of washing away sin, it is just another occult ceremony, typifying the ultimate cleansing of the soul, and the eternal, immortal, purity of the spirit. When the Master's teaching on the earth is openly and publicly known, He will explain it to the people, but He wants it known beforehand, so that they can get accustomed to the change of interpretation."

OCTOBER 3rd

"All my work now is being done in the spirit world, just receiving souls who are passing over in such numbers. All of them from the battle-fields are so much to be pitied, because they are so unhappy at not being able to fight the Germans to the end, I am speaking at the moment of our men. So we do all we can to comfort them, and explain that they will certainly know the result of the War, and will see for themselves their final overthrow. And there's another thing that is awfully interesting, mother, and that is how some of them are so eager to find their friends, and we help them all we can, because their case is different from the ordinary peaceful death of a soul on earth. Those friends who are desperately anxious to see each other are allowed to meet before they have to separate for their individual training. So you see, mother, how wonderfully kind the Master is, and how

thoughtful for the welfare of the newly arrived soul. Although all have to be trained, there is nothing done to make it any harder than it need be. And then I have been to a good many lectures lately by several of the very advanced spirits, and I have learnt a good many more interesting things about my present body. One of the things is, that it will not last for all time, but will drop off when I have finished with it, in the same way as my physical body did, only without any pain or discomfort. And then I shall wear my still finer one, which is called the mental body. I think it must be something like a dragonfly bursting out of its sheath. And when I wear that body I shall be in a much higher sphere, like Bruno, and able to do quite extraordinary things, and see quite easily into the past and future. But it won't be for a very long time yet. Then we make our teachers tell us a little of life on these higher planes. When I say 'make' I don't mean we force them, but we ask them, and if they have been given permission by the Master, they will talk to us of those wonderful worlds. You know, mother, these great spirits have sacrificed a great deal to come down to our plane and help us, because, though my part is quite beautiful and we are all so happy here, there are parts where it is not all like that, and much is seen and heard that is perfectly abhorrent to these holy spirits. We understand that, and it makes our gratitude much more deep and heartfelt. Now I must go. My love, mother. Tiny, rest now."

OCTOBER 4th

"The Master wants it understood that there will be no sudden, drastic change, or sweeping away of familiar services. What will change will be the meaning they should have, not what the priests have imagined they should mean. All changes will come about quite gradually; it is not the method of the Almighty God to hurry things. Those who are spiritually minded enough to receive the new teaching will receive it in full, those who are more backward will not be hurried. Nothing can be done by the Master in a large way until the end of the War; then will come the great outpouring of spiritual force which I have mentioned before. Do not let anyone get the notion, mother, that the Master's coming again means that He will reign over the world like a material king, and incidentally have a palace in all the principal cities! That phase of the earth's evolution came to an end many thousands of years ago, but the real sovereignty of the Master will be seen in the infinitely higher view that men will take of life here, and much fuller knowledge of the life with us. All that is coming through to you now, mother, is just preparing people for His coming. It will help the advent of the Master so much if there exists in the mind of the public some idea of the outlines, at all events, of His teaching. One of the points will be the necessity for a much more careful choice of the men who are to be priests, and a much more rigorous training. A man will be allowed to give up all thought of Orders, even after his training, if he realizes he has mistaken his vocation. And then, once a priest, he will be required to devote his life to his spiritual calling. A priest cannot do that work and be obliged to eke out a scanty income in all sorts of ways. Neither should he be an unofficial relieving officer to the parish! Freedom from financial worry is the first

requirement, of a man who takes upon himself the cure of souls. All means should be in proportion to necessities.”

(“Tiny darling, is that right, because necessities are relative?”)

“Yes, it’s right, mother, but I’ve got a bit mixed up. I want to say, really, that certain fundamental material necessities should be provided for the priest, in addition to the money paid him as his hire. The Master will also teach something about the marriage of the clergy, but I am not allowed to say any more about that just now. Reform of Church and clergy is one of the main points of the new revelation. We do not know much about the way in which the reforms will come, but we think it probable that they will be demanded by the laity.”

OCTOBER 5th

“Do not forget that nothing is my invention or yours; always remember that the Master’s permission is necessary, before anything can be told to you.

“At present I am working in France again with my men, and enjoying it hugely. All of us who were soldiers are so keen to be allowed to go with the Allies into Berlin. Of course we can go as often as we like with our spirit men, but we want to go with the men who are still fighting in their physical bodies. We think we shall be allowed, the Master knows how much we wish it, and we are content to wait for His permission. The Allies will march into Berlin you know, mother, although some people have thought it could never be done. And look here, before many days are over we feel there will be some startling developments in the Near East, and then the downfall of the Austro-German Empire will only be a matter of weeks. Then will come, we feel, the awakening of the German people. Some of the egos who are coming over here now, are so thankful to be free of their incarnation among those awfully wicked people. Some of them are advanced enough in occult teaching to know the truth of successive earth lives, and they feel the degradation of the race to which they have been attached in this last earth life, very keenly. Some of the Germans on the earth now, are honestly wishing that their country may be beaten to the ground, because they know that only by complete and overwhelming defeat on your plane, can Germany hope to discover her soul. We are all praying for that, too, not from any feeling of vindictiveness, but because we know that her regeneration lies there. After the War is over, will appear the effects of the War, and that will be the time for all to help in binding up the wounds of France, Belgium and Serbia. We shudder when we see the awful havoc in those countries, and the terrible sufferings of the people. The worst things that have been printed in your papers do not even dimly approach the reality, The Blacks have completely dominated that Teutonic nation, and will not cease their grip just yet. German will turn against German, before the country can be rid of their awful influence.

“This message of mine this morning is not simply a clairvoyant description of what has happened and will happen, it is a bigger thing than that. The Master wants it

brought home to people on the earth, the awful results to a nation given over entirely to belief in brute force, and that might is right. It happened once before, you know' mother, ever so many years ago, and in the end there was nothing left for the Almighty Ruler of all the worlds to do, but to drown an enormous number of them. The Manu or king of that time, who was really a very high spirit, knew what was coming, and withdrew with all the best of the people to a safe part. There is no great spirit ruling on the earth today like the king of that far away time, so the egos have had to fight by themselves. Not entirely, though, much help has been given to the Allied Forces after they had learnt the needed lesson and were ready to receive it. Now I must go. My love, mother. Tiny, rest now."

OCTOBER 6th

"I am awfully busy on the Western Front; things are humming, you know, mother, and much will happen in the next week, and you will be very surprised when you see it in the paper. We know a good deal of the way things are working for the downfall of Germany and are much interested in this new form of peace offering from the Prince Max of Baden.\* He isn't honest in his suggestions, mother, it's all a ruse, but the higher spirits are seeing to it that the Allies shall not be deceived.

\* I had not read the Prince's offer. - JESSIE PLATTS.

"Nothing that I can tell you, mother, of the love of Christ for souls on your plane can give you any real idea of the power of it. If you could imagine the most unselfish person you ever knew, and mix that up with all the kindness you can imagine, and add on to that the happiness of the happiest hearted person you can think of you would get some idea of the Master's personality. People must not always think of Him as grieving over the wickedness of people on the earth, and being mildly and rather mournfully pleased when they make an effort to do what is right. Our Master, mother, is a strong Spirit, brimming over with kindness and love of laughter and happiness. The ordinary idea of Christ of a good many people is a rather effeminate one. That has come about through the confusion of the two distinct personalities, looking on the Master Christ and His faithful disciple, Jesus of Nazareth, as one person. And then the pictures of Him do not give one the least idea of a powerful personality. Always there is a marked suggestion of weakness, and awful sorrow. Of course the Master is desperately grieved about the wickedness on the earth, but He knows that all will work through in the end, as He worked through so many thousands and thousands of years ago. The great disciple, Jesus, had not the full knowledge our Master had when they were working in Syria 2,000 years ago, but he knew a great deal more than appears in the Christian Bible. And, mother, you know it is possible for some people on your plane to read the past clairvoyantly, and so they know a great deal more about him than the public generally. They know what a very long and severe training he had before his mind and body were ready for the habitation of our great Master. He went to all sorts of schools and colleges in different parts of the world - in Egypt and India - until the time came for him to

come back to Palestine, and the Master Christ to begin His work - in the body of Jesus. That wonderful entry took place when that other faithful worker named John, baptized whom he thought was Jesus, the son of Joseph. After that the Master taught in Palestine for the three years recorded in the Christian Bible, and then on the night of the betrayal by that poor soul Judas, His work in the body of His disciple was finished. Jesus was killed. Christ, the Master, had died a human death many thousands of years before and there was - ”

“Something’s wrong, I think.”)

“Yes, mother, you’ve lost power for a minute. Is that last bit sense?” \*

\* I read it over to him. - JESSIE PLATTS.

“No, mother, that isn’t quite right. I wanted to say that our Master left the body of the disciple Jesus before the crucifixion of the latter. It was a man who was killed, not a son of God. Do you see, mother, how differently the Gospel story reads with the proper interpretation, and the false teaching removed? It’s so much more intelligible, isn’t it? After the crucifixion, our Master materialised in the form of Jesus to ever so many of the people He had known on the earth; Jesus came here to the spirit world, to perfect his training. The Master Christ stayed on the earth for a very long time after His servant laid down his life, and taught in many countries. Jesus the disciple is a very high spirit now, mother, and very near to our Master. Mary, his mother, often comes to my part of the spirit world. She always speaks to me, mother, because, you know, she has been given charge of you and that favourite friend of Jesus, John of the Cross. She has the most lovely face you can possibly imagine, mother, and full of sympathy for all women. She was not many years on the earth last time, but she made the utmost use of her opportunities, and loved God and mankind; so there was no need for further earth life for her when her dearly loved eldest son died, for the teaching of his Master.”

OCTOBER 7th

“As the time goes on I find myself getting happier and happier, and ever so full of love for others, and above all for the Master. Do you know, mother, it makes me feel as if I could never serve Him enough, because He is so unspeakably kind and loving to me. I think very many of us feel the same, and the very hardest service He might ask of us would be the greatest joy we could have. You know, mother, service here is hard sometimes, and we have still to be on our guard against any selfish feeling or pride. We don’t become, by any means, absolutely selfless and humble in a short time; it takes a very long time indeed sometimes. But the difference here is this: no one makes it worse for you. Everyone tries his utmost to help anyone who seems inclined to stumble on the path, and so we find the struggle towards ultimate perfection, infinitely less laborious than souls on the earth. And, of course, I have been so lucky in coming almost at once to this most beautiful part. You can’t dimly imagine the atmosphere here, mother! Nothing annoys you, nothing hurts you, and

all of them are as kind as possible. And then this life, we are told, beautiful as it is, cannot be compared with the happiness and joy of the higher spheres. All we can do here is to prepare as well as we can, and wait with patience till the time comes when we shall go on and join Bruno and all the other higher spirits, who are helping us now on this plane, but who really live on a much higher one. When the time comes for me to go on, I may not be able to write through you, mother, but perhaps the Master will give me permission, because He knows I should want to so very much. Anyhow, it won't be for a very long time yet, but I've just mentioned it, mother, so that it wouldn't come as a crushing disappointment. And even supposing I do go on before you come over, it won't make any difference to my meeting you, and bringing you to my beautiful home here, and working with you. I do not think I shall go on until both you and Jack are here. Sometimes we are allowed to stay on a lower plane till our very special friends join us, and then we go on together. It all depends "on past existences and the strength of the affection between the souls. There is another point which I have not touched upon yet, and which is a very sad but important one, and that is the sorrow of mothers in the spirit world for terribly unworthy sons. That again all hangs together with the truth of previous existences, and there is much to be told to you about that.

"Now I must get back to France, mother. Don't let people on the earth be deceived in this cry for an armistice from the Central Powers; it's a devilish device of the Blacks to gain time. Nothing is possible for the Allies but unconditional surrender - as in the case of Bulgaria."

OCTOBER 8th

"My work and my life are getting more and more interesting, and I wouldn't live on the earth plane again in my physical body, for anything that could be offered to me. You don't know how glorious it is to be free, mother, and always to be surrounded with love and kindness. At present much teaching is being given to us on the way up to God for souls who do not belong to the Christian Church. There are millions of people, you know, mother, who have not the same reverence for our Master as we have, and yet are on the upward arc. All souls who look for union with the Almighty God and who love mankind, are working out their evolution on the highest spiritual lines, even though they may never have heard of the great Master, the Christ of Western nations. It is a great mistake to lump together so many different races of people who are alien to the Christian faith, and to call them heathen. That word should only be applied to the very lowest races of mankind, those sunk in the depths of cruelty and black superstitions. Ever so many other races have their particular great teacher, who stands in the same relation to them as our Master Christ does to us, and who live the same kind of holy life and gave pure and holy teaching, according to the needs and enlightenment of the particular race to which he was sent. All of these great teachers were once men, and ultimately became sons of God. There were some very great teachers on the earth many thousands of years ago who

did not incarnate on your plane, but had their material training on other planets, and then came to the earth to teach men the way to the knowledge of perfect humanity.

OCTOBER 9th

“Now for a bit about myself. My teacher Bruno says that I am making excellent progress and that the Master is pleased with me. Isn't that splendid, mother? My work is now with those men who are fighting in this last lap of the War. Didn't I tell you some time ago, mother, how rapidly it was coming to an end! It was true, wasn't it? I didn't make a mistake there. And then I am still being taught a great deal about the teaching which the Master will give on the earth. All of it will not be acceptable to people, some will sneer, some will say as before, He is mad.’

“All of it would have been given 2,000 years ago had the people been ready. Some of the most important truths were told to a few, and have been handed down to posterity. If that had not been done, the Master's task would have been infinitely harder this time. Still on the earth remain spiritual souls, in different parts, of different race, and different creed, who have assimilated those truths, ‘and stuck to them, in spite of the scorn and persecution of the rest of the community. Above all, there has been in the lands of the East the cherished hope of the coming of another World Teacher. People in the West are looking for Him, too, but it is from the so-called heathen that the desire took form.”

OCTOBER 10th

“All my work now is in France; there is so much to do there and it is all so exciting, and we are simply as busy as we can be. You know when you are in spirit life, death seems such an ordinary commonplace kind of thing; there is no terror in it from our point of view, because we know it is only the commencement of a life that is so much freer, and infinitely more full of enjoyment. We look upon the death of the body as a mighty big piece of luck for the man when he has done his duty as far as he saw it, while on the earth plane. And even for those who wasted the opportunities of their earth life, and deliberately set aside every good impulse and unselfish endeavour, it is not the bugbear that many people think, although for souls of that description it does mean a very long and arduous discipline. On every plane the fact of life is really preparation for still higher planes of existence, until the consummation is reached and we' become as Gods, knowing good and evil,' in other words, Christs. So you see, when we are working on the battle-fields and seeing the men giving up their physical bodies to death, we can do all our work with glad hearts, knowing how soon the suffering will cease, and the rest which comes after, and then the happy hunting-grounds for some (as the story books on earth about Red Indians used to say) almost at once, and for those who need a longer training, the same happiness a bit later on. All this is for you to tell people, mother, so that gradually the real fear of death may be destroyed, and it may come to be looked upon as nothing more dreadful than going to work in Canada, or Australia. It's nothing like so much of a parting if people

would only believe it, because death does not separate friends who have loved each other, like emigration does. All the dead are so much more alive than anyone on the earth, and they are in the world just the same as before, in their astral, or spiritual bodies, the next body to the physical. And death is such a friend too, mother, sometimes, especially to those who are the very last left of their generation, or even of two generations. Think of the loneliness of old people, mother, who know nobody on the earth who remembers them when they were young, and do you know, sometimes, they tell me here, a soul simply prays the Master to be allowed to die, and join his friends again. Sometimes such a prayer is answered by the Master as the soul wishes, but not often. All man's earthly lives are the fruit of what has gone before, and they must be loyal and steadfast, and work to the very end.

“And now there is just one other thing I want to tell you. The Master Christ is very anxious that another terribly cruel doctrine of the Roman Church specially, should be done away. And that is this: the priests of that community teach, that a little child, or rather the soul enthroned in the body of a little child, perishes if it dies before it is baptized. Anything more monstrous or more unlike the overwhelming love of God and our Master for every soul, is impossible to imagine. It is a cruel lie, mother, and will you please be very emphatic about it when you explain this to people. It is also wrong from another point of view. Nothing can destroy the ego. No sin, however seemingly unforgivable. That kind of ego would have an enormously long time of discipline, but in the end would stand before the Great God, redeemed, restored, forgiven. Now I must go. My love, mother.”

OCTOBER 11th

“Well, we are simply bubbling over with joy at the thought of a speedy end to the War. Don't be surprised, mother, if the actual fighting is all over before Christmas; and so I won't say anything more about that now.

“All the teaching that I pass on to you, mother, is told to me by great spirits from higher planes, who receive it from the Master Himself. Nothing is trivial or unnecessary, though perhaps some people may say they knew it all before.

Perhaps they did, but many of them have forgotten it, and its practical application. Church-going and regular attendance at the Sacrament of the Eucharist, and almsgiving, and all the rest of the ecclesiastical conventions, though right and proper in themselves, are worthless if the people who observe them do not, carry the teaching into their lives. A man may go to church three times every Sunday, and holding family prayers morning and evening, but if he cheats in his business, or is cruel to his family, the religious observances on which he sets so much store, are not a scrap of good to him. The man who never enters a church and has hardly heard of such a thing as a sacrament, but who is kind and gentle, to animals, and human beings, is much higher up in the scale of evolution than the church-goer. So much of this conventional Christianity is abhorrent to the Master - it is such a sham. No one can help himself forward to the perfect life, unless the motive for all his actions on

the earth plane, is pure, and free from self. All the false pretences of goodness, all the hypocrisy, are more unbearable to the Master than even flagrant wickedness. You know, mother, sometimes people may commit what is called an unspeakably deadly sin on your plane, because of great unselfish love, one to "the other. Well, they will have to bear the consequences of the wrong-doing, but the absorbing affection the one had for the other, will go a long way towards shortening the discipline. The same with many other acts which do not stand so much in the limelight of public opinion. Not many sins are committed from absolutely unworthy motives, there is generally a spark of affection for some other person mixed up with it. All this talk about the horrible wickedness of sin is true to a certain extent, but the righteous Pharisee is very apt to confuse the sin and the sinner, and to refuse to distinguish between the two. When our Master was last on the earth, one of the most important commands He gave to the people was this, 'judge not,' that meant because they could not know all the circumstances that led a person to commit some unworthy act, and would therefore be incapable of giving a fair opinion. There is much of that kind of judging on the earth, you know, mother, only it is called 'criticism,' a milder expression of the same thing. All of you must learn to appreciate the real meaning of the word charity. You don't know, on the earth, how much the spoken thought can influence another person, or what harm (or good) it may, and can do. But we know it here, and the message for you to-day, mother, is to tell people to learn to think and speak kindly of others. If they can't speak kindly, at least let them be silent. This is an important message, mother, and one that is very badly needed."

OCTOBER 12th

"There is still an enormous amount to be learnt, mother, about spirit life and conditions, and its relation to your plane. All communications come through more than one medium if they are really important, as it is necessary for everyone to obtain the Master's permission first. Very often our messages to our people which are just little ordinary ones of no particular interest, come straight from us to you. But anything vital, or that has to be made known to people on the earth, is sent by the Master to His higher servants, and if they do not communicate direct themselves, they pass the message on to other spirits, perhaps less advanced, but who are ready to be trusted with messages of importance. We find much difficulty still in gauging time, but we hope that when there is constant, authorized communications between the planes, and those on both sides know much more of the difficulties, that we shall become more accurate. It was not so many thousands of years ago when the flow of communications on both sides was the ordinary method of progress, and we think it will once again right itself. It would be an enormous help to the subject if that could happen. On the other hand, it has been necessary for the faith of earnest seekers after the truth, that this uncertainty should exist. To many of those souls the waiting for the fulfilment of what has been told them by one of us over here, is a very real test of their sincerity.

“Now just a word about a small point connected with the new revelation. The Master wants it known that nothing like class distinction exists in the spirit world, but there does exist distinction of character, and temperament, and capabilities. That’s rather an important point, mother, because some priests have taught that Heaven (as they say, but it really isn’t Heaven, you know, mother) levels up people at once. They are wrong, because they confuse the manner of progression. Heaven is one of the very highest spheres, not to be reached by any of us here, for many a long day, and then, of course, we shall be on much more of an equality, but no one will be exactly like everyone else, even there. These priests have forgotten entirely, that, between the time a soul leaves the physical body, and passes into that very, very high sphere, spreads a very long time of special work and training. Do not let people think that a very musical person will be sent to live among mathematicians, or a brilliant artist among those who know nothing whatever about art, and are bored stiff by the name of pictures! All souls go to the special environment which they have acquired for themselves while on earth. Only in that way, is there distinction of class in the spirit world.”

OCTOBER 13th

“All that makes for spiritual advancement must go hand in hand with doing one’s duty while on the earth in a physical body. No one must shirk his responsibilities on purpose to devote himself to the study (and practice) entirely of spiritual things; my Master is very clear on that, point. It is not the right way to evolve to give up all duties, and to retire to a cloister, or sisterhood, or brotherhood, as the case may be. When a soul honestly feels that retirement from the cares and anxieties of the material world is the only way for him, he will receive instruction as to what he should do. In very many cases it is a form of selfishness and worth nothing. Very, very rarely does it happen that the contemplative life, as it is called, has been entered upon with perfectly pure motives, Almost always has it happened that men and women who chose that path were worn out with trouble of one sort and another, and thought they could escape further trial and temptation, if they retired from the world. But they shirked their job, mother, though perhaps they did not know it, and called it by a high sounding title, ‘The vocation for a religious life.’ The Master wants it very definitely known that all avoidance of contact with the world, isn’t to be tolerated now, though in times long past there may have been now and again, some really honest souls who made the service of God the one aim of their lives - in that particular way. But it’s different now. With further light, all souls will realize the importance of doing all their humdrum daily duties in the best possible way - service to the Almighty God. The Master wants people to know, mother, that the well performed, irksome, sordid duty, is a mile-stone passed on the path of evolution - if it is done in the spirit of cheerfulness. There are lots of people, you know, mother, who do their duty in this life awfully well, and make everybody around perfectly miserable in the doing! That’s not what doing one’s duty as service to God means. It is only doing it to themselves, and so of course it turns to dust and ashes. All these

small practical details of the life of the soul, while in a physical body, are important, mother, because of the effect on the next body, or, rather, perhaps not that, but the spiritual part of the soul. It all goes to build up the character of the ego, and to determine his place in the spirit world. Sometimes duties may be awfully tiresome, and seemingly quite unrepaying. Never mind that. You don't know why you have to do those particular bits of work, but it's known over here, and the reason will be told you one day, and then you'll understand, and wonder how you could have been so foolish as to kick against the doing of them. Don't let people put you off, mother, by calling this trivial; it's nothing of the sort. It's all bound up with the great economic Christ-like life of the nation, which we hope to see in its entirety before so very many years are past. Unselfishness is the keynote of the life on earth - as it will be - and that will not come all at once, but it can begin now and continue to grow more and more with the coming of the great Master Christ, to shew men the blessedness of love and brotherhood, among the nations. There was a great Jewish soldier once, mother, called Judas Maccabaeus, and after much fighting he conquered his enemies, and was called the Prince of Peace. That title was applied to our Master when He first came to the earth 2,000 years ago, as a teacher - and it was a curious mistake on the part of the Church, because He said Himself, 'I come, not to bring peace, but dissension on the earth, and families will quarrel and fight among each other on My account.' It is going to be different now, mother. He really will bring peace this time, and the nations will have wrought themselves to the point of being able to practise it. We don't know the details yet, but the time is at hand when swords will be beaten into ploughshares, and the awful idea that differences among countries must be settled by the slaughter of thousands of human beings, until one of the nations has to cry 'pax,' will be done away with, and war become a tiling of the past."

OCTOBER 14th

"All I am doing in France now is so very full of excitement and interest, the spirit of the Armies is so wonderful. You see, mother, don't you, that I told you the truth when I said how enormously they were being helped from this side. Haven't you heard people speak of the marvellous progress.

("Yes.")

"Well, it is marvellous to those on the earth who don't understand; it couldn't have been done by the earthly leaders alone. And there is one thing I want to say; there is no fear of the Allies being hoodwinked by the German wail for an armistice. That is being prevented from this side, so be quite happy, mother, and look out for big things to happen quite soon.

"All that is being told to you now is for the public to read, the bits about the War are to be included, because they all hang together with the teaching. The Master Christ sees with much compassion, the unnecessary sufferings of the physical body, endured by so many people on your plane. Much of it could be avoided with proper

knowledge of certain laws, which govern the health of the physical body. I am speaking now of the sufferings of people for apparently no fault of their own, though it must always be remembered that every ego on the earth has earned his present environment, by past behaviour, good or otherwise. In spite of that, there is a good deal that ought to and could be avoided. The mothers of the future race should choose the very healthiest possible men for their husbands, and see to the bringing up of their children, as well as, it can possibly be done. It is the duty of the State to so arrange, for people who are very poor, that healthy homes and surroundings are possible for everyone. Then the State must provide competent teachers to train all ignorant mothers and wives, so that the health and comfort of the family, shall not be ruined, even in suitable quarters, by ignorance and incompetence. It ought not to be even thinkable, that such an institution as the National Society for the Prevention of Cruelty to Children should exist. Much of the ill-treatment of children can be traced to wretched homes, and drink-sodden parents. Many of these could be saved from a tortured childhood and criminal youth, if the homes were what the Master Christ wishes them to be. All landlords of squalid courts and filthy hovels, and tumbling-down yards, should be compelled to surrender their property to the State, which should then empower certain people to pull them down, and rebuild them, according to the laws of health and beauty. And, mother, this is all leading up to the spiritual part of the Master's teaching, because no soul can develop very fast, or even at all, if it be lodged for the time in surroundings such as I have described. Granted it has earned its present environment by error in the past, but that is no reason why he should not get out of it as quickly as he can, and those egos who are much more highly placed, many of them even rulers of the land, should help the unfortunate ones in the best way possible - helping them to help themselves. What drives many a man to drink? A dirty, uncomfortable, wretched home. What drives children into the streets? Crowded homes and nothing to do. Many of the souls over here, mother, are awfully keen on this subject. They made it their work while they were on the earth, and they see now so much more clearly that material comfort, to a certain extent, is necessary for spiritual advancement. All great social reformers have had the right idea in the main, and some of them did an enormous amount of good. But none of them quite realized that the best way is to make the people want to help themselves. I want to explain that a bit, mother. It is not the best way to give reading-rooms, and clubs, and libraries, and all sorts of things like that to the people, and manage them by rich souls, or people of the leisured classes. The poorer egos should take their part in their own elevation, however small it may be. People do not value things that are given them, half so much as those they have won for themselves. They should also have a very large part in the management of any scheme for their own improvement. That would increase their self-respect, and raise their independence; there should not be the least flavour of so-called charity about it. Of course they must be helped at first, but they should be allowed to stand on their own feet, as soon, and as far, as they are able. My message may sound strange to you, mother, but it is really quite

sound, and much more remains to be told to you concerning the social conditions of the earth, in preparation for the coming of the Master Christ in His fulness.”

OCTOBER 15th

“You see I was right when I told you the peace offer was a fraud, mother, and also that the Allies would see through it. There is going to be a big development very soon, and not to Germany’s advantage.

“The teaching that the Master will give on the marriage of the clergy is an important part of His programme. No blame whatever is attached to priests for marrying like ordinary men, but it is advisable that there should be a certain number of specially trained men for the priesthood, who do not burden themselves with material cares in that fashion. They must be very very carefully chosen and trained, and very, very few will be found fitly constituted for work of that kind. There is no blame and no shame attached to a priest, should he desire to marry. Those who honestly can devote their lives to solitary work, are working out their evolution on different lines - that is all, and also shewing the fruit of their training in previous existences. That great truth is going to clear the way most tremendously, mother, and to throw fresh light on many points of material life, and to answer so many vexed questions. The needful thing for every man and woman on the earth, is not to shirk or evade their responsibilities, but to shoulder them bravely and do the very best they can with them, and for them. We think that both these points will cause much discussion among different sects, but that won’t matter. They will be taught, and the Master wishes it known beforehand. There is so much to do, mother, and so very few to do it, I mean in the way of preparing for His coming. All that is told to you is a means to that end, and please, mother, remember to tell people that the Master’s coming is as certain as their own death! That may make them think - at all events some of them will.

“When the Master comes there is one abuse He will sweep away at once. And that is the awful notion of paying for seats in churches. Can’t you see how disgusting that is, mother? It makes the rich man stand on a different footing to the poor man, in a place called the House of God, as if such an inequality could possibly please Him! It’s so foolish too, and only means that the priests who allow it, and the congregations who demand it, have not the faintest idea of the love of God. It’s money, money, and what money can buy. The squire has a comfortable cushioned pew, the shepherd a hard bench! It is one of the glaring faults of many of the priests in charge of parishes to-day and hideous in the eyes of our Master.”

OCTOBER 16th

“We are having much teaching now about the sources of evil-doing on the earth. It is the most difficult subject that we have attacked at present, and awfully hard to explain, but I’ll do the best I can. To begin with, in the very, very long ago, when form on the earth was only just beginning to exist, the great Almighty God developed

His wonderful scheme, that all created things should ultimately become part of Himself. At the first there was no such thing as evil, because the form on the earth, though alive was not a real intelligence, or even made up of separate entities. That took place very gradually indeed, and took millions of years to accomplish. First of all came creatures that just crawled about, later on some things that stood upright, and were of enormous height, and rather like huge jellyfish, with just the very faintest glimmer of intelligence in them. Again, after many years, beings came to be developed with definite limbs, and heads with brains inside them, though of course absolutely undeveloped. Then was the time for teaching, so the great Almighty God sent wonderful spirits from other planets to work on the earth, and teach these rudimentary, uncivilized egos. They must have had a disagreeable job, because these creatures were awfully hard to teach - the earth wasn't at all a nice place to live on then. It was half dark, and thick, and steamy, quite unlike what it is to-day. As time went on these earth creatures gradually became more developed, but only on certain lines. They were animals, not men, as we understand the word. They came to realize that if one was stronger than another, he could get more to eat, and brute force was their way up. You will understand, won't you, mother, how absolutely impossible it was at that time to teach those egos anything spiritual at all. The great God knew that, and patiently watched the evolution of all those souls. For mind you, mother, they were souls, from the very beginning. At last came the time when they were developed enough to be considered a nation, and then one of these great spirits took the office of king, and ruled in the ordinary way. But in between all this development there had been very long rests, when evolution stopped entirely, and all the egos on the earth were put to a kind of sleep, and the great spirits returned to their real homes. I'm afraid this will sound nonsense to you, mother, but it is so hard for me to explain. You see, don't you, that evil, as it is called, had its origin in the very earliest dim ages of the world's history, and was simply a finding out of the egos, of their own powers. At that time they had no conception of good and evil. They simply found out that they could obtain certain benefits to themselves by behaving in a certain way. So for thousands and thousands of years, all the egos on the earth were a cruel and savage race, simply because it was their development. Then gradually some became a little better, and the great God knew then that the time had come for further teaching. And so it went on, age after age, until the earth reached that wonderful stage on its journey called the Golden Age. That was the time when the egos had arrived at the stage when they could distinguish between good and evil; when their king, the Manu, was a mighty spirit who ruled his people wisely and well, and who was in direct communication with spirits on this side. That state of things lasted a very long time, and then came events which led to the downfall of the people of that time. Evil conquered, and the great majority of the inhabitants of the earth were drowned in a mighty flood. The Manu had done his very best for the people, and at last, seeing that the doom was inevitable, he took the remnant of the people who were still trying to follow the upward path, and led them to a place of safety.\*

From that time the evolution of the world has gone on with no world-wide catastrophe, until this most awful war. As in those far off days, so now. The evil powers have taken hold of the German nation, as they did their ancestors in Poseidonis, many thousands of years ago, and utter destruction is the only way to save them, as was the case then. Evil only becomes evil to be responsible for, and avoided, when knowledge of higher powers comes too. Up till then, although the results were the same, it was not evil as we understand it, but merely a natural consequence of the primitive struggles of the primitive ego.”

\* I have since learned that, among other things, the Manu is the author of the Hindu Scripture “Manusmriti” or “The Laws of Manu.” At the time when this was written I had never heard of him otherwise than through these messages. - JESSIE PLATTS, June 19th, 1921.

OCTOBER 17th

“Now I’ll talk about my messages. All sorts of people will want to worry you with questions about them. Don’t mind if they do. Just answer them as well as you can, and if any of them are rather unfair and prejudiced, just say that you are not responsible for the opinions expressed, and leave it at that. Many of them will bless you for being a means of comforting others. Some of the priests on your plane will take exception to the teaching that Christ our Master and Jesus, are two separate persons. Deal gently with those people, if they shew it is a matter of very real difficulty to them. You will be able to distinguish between them, and those others who deny it because, as they say, it is contrary to the teaching of the Church. Oh, mother, what a bugbear and what a monument of stupidity that expression is! The Church, as they conceive it, does not exist. As Christ conceived it, it has always existed, and always will exist. Christ’s Church is the whole Universe, all nations, and creeds, and languages; the priests’ Church is a select body of worshippers of one particular form of religion. What a difference! Widespread, all-embracing love on the one side - on the other, narrow scholastic restriction, and much unauthorized authority. So will it be, mother, everything is working towards that mighty goal - unity of worship; and everything that any soul on the earth can do to help forward that great ideal, is working in the name of the Master Christ. Now I must go. My love, mother. Tiny, rest now.”

OCTOBER 18th

“My message to-day (I’ve chipped in now Raymond has finished) is to tell you something of the nature of Divine forgiveness. I’ll do the best I can, but the teaching that is coming through now is awfully difficult to get through to you, mother. Will you please try to take it down as carefully as possible? Now I’ll start. What is really meant by the forgiveness of sins by the Almighty God is just this. When the soul, after many attempts to follow the right path, and to be a humble disciple of the Master Christ, and after many failures, at last comes to the knowledge that no other way is possible for him, and to desire with all the strength of his being that he may

reach something of the many blessings promised by the Master in His teaching to those who earnestly work to that end; when that stage of longing desire for the highest is reached (that he is able to conceive) there is given to him the knowledge that his struggles have not been in vain, and that he has succeeded in triumphing, to a certain extent, over his lower nature. By much spiritual force from this side, the soul is made conscious that his efforts have been noticed by the Almighty God, and that His wisdom has seen the progress made by His servant. That consciousness of approval from the Almighty God causes the soul the most profound thankfulness, and fills him with fresh strength to fight anew. What is called 'forgiveness of sins' does not exist in the sense in which it is understood on your plane. Man forgives himself, by his repeated efforts to do better, and to climb ever higher and higher. It must always be remembered that man is not left entirely alone in his pilgrimage on the earth. Every soul has one special protecting spirit always with him, who knows and sees all the man's actions and thoughts, and words, and who bears up to the Master the tale of his life on earth. And there are also many other aids from this side, in the prayers of many holy spirits for the struggling egos still incarnate in the flesh. Do not let people think that a man must ask for forgiveness when he has done wrong, and, so to speak, put the responsibility on the Almighty God. He must confess his fault, and repair it to the best of his power. But that is not the same thing as the orthodox idea of forgiveness. That is all mixed up with the doctrine of the Atonement, by which priests have sought to compel people to believe, that the consequences of their own evil-doing, can be borne by another person. It is not so, and the Master will make that very clear when He comes. Each man bears his own burden, whatever it may be. Each man forgives himself each time he repents, and earnestly endeavours to right the wrong he may have done, either to himself or to other people. Prayer to the Almighty Ruler of the universe is one of the most powerful aids to progress, and supplication to our Master Christ, who is the special Guardian of your earth and its inhabitants. I wonder if this is clear to you, mother?"

("Yes, I think so, darling. You really mean that each man works out his own salvation, don't you?")

"Yes, that's it, mother. Now I must go. My love, mother. Tiny, rest now."

OCTOBER 19th

"Social progress and economic development must go hand in hand with spiritual advance. All that goes to make for the welfare and moral training on the earth, of all those who are not yet advanced enough to obtain it for themselves, is helping the Master's work. Much of the so-called 'charity' is to be deplored, or rather not the charity itself, but the way in which the charitable organizations are managed; there is a great deal too much fuss and hard method, and too little of the love of Christ. Charity ought not to have the stigma attached to it that it has at present, which makes the self-respecting, hard-working ego, so very chary of accepting help of any kind, or even letting the authorities know he is in need of help. There ought to be no

feeling of condescension on one side, and disinclination on the other. It ought to be the natural thing for a poorer ego to accept assistance from a richer one, and for the rich one to offer it. But people must not take hold of the notion that if a poorer ego is in some sort of a difficulty, he should at once ask for assistance; that would be a stultifying of the growth of that ego, because his independence would go, and he would become something like a makeshift, and never advance. The kind of assistance that should be given is the means for the egos to help themselves; that's the point, mother, self-help, not doles from public funds which don't lead to permanent betterment. And the way in which so many of the charitable institutions are conducted, calls for searching enquiry. So many of them are hard, cold, unlovely places, full of irksome restrictions, and mortifying conditions. The authorities forget that the inmates of these places (I'm speaking generally now, mother, of workhouses and orphanages, and training schools for young egos) are young, and want sunshine, and love, and laughter, and beauty. These are almost always wanting in the institutions I am describing. Certain regulations, of course, there must be; but matters could be arranged quite satisfactorily with half the number. Much more care should be exercised in the choice of the officials who are in charge of such places. No one should have any position of authority in the institutions which are concerned with the care of children and young people, unless they are filled with love and compassion for these young egos, which circumstances have forced into surroundings of that kind. Many of those young souls are most desperately unhappy, because they want affection, and do not get it. Many of the children can remember their own homes, and mothers, and the authorities are apt to forget that, and think of them as machines, to be turned out according to a set pattern. Some of the reformatories on the earth are much more deserving of the name of prisons. It is doubtful if you can reform boys or girls by sending them to mix with a crowd of others who may be far more depraved than they. Each case should have individual training and it would be far better for the offenders if they were not sent to a reformatory at all, but put into the charge of common-sensible, Christ-loving people, enlightened enough to understand the responsibility, and practical enough to take certain precautions, with the charge entrusted to them. We over here can see the harm that is being done by crowding together all these young offenders, and we feel that certain people on your earth are beginning to realize it too.

“And then there is the question of looking after the really old poor people. The ordinary workhouse is a blot on the government of England. Think what it means. A bare, ugly building, men and women, old as they are, separated from each other, very irksome restrictions, very little occupation, even for those who are strong enough for it, and practically no joy in life. It is not the ideal ending for an old man who has worked hard all his days, and perhaps served his country faithfully as well, in either of the Services, or for an old woman either. The system is wrong, and much teaching will be given on the subject when the Master's mission is fully started. Much of this may offend people, mother, they will say it is unspiritual. Well, never

mind, they do not yet understand how closely the spiritual and the material are entwined. When the Master came before, He gave much practical teaching concerning the customs of material life; He will do so again. When all these abuses, and man-made customs, and laws, are done away with, and the earth filled with the Brotherhood of what the Master will teach, it will be a glorious place to live in! People must not expect these changes all at once, they will only come very gradually, but they can all help by believing in the necessity for the readjustment of so much that is unsatisfactory, and coldly and mechanically done, for the many who are not in a position to help themselves. Nothing but the love of Christ can transform the world from its material money-getting outlook; much remains to be done, much remains to be taught, but these messages are sent to open people's eyes a little, so that they can see for themselves, how much undeserved inequality and suffering, could be avoided, by a little more intelligence and sympathy, on the part of more highly placed egos."

OCTOBER 20th

"My Master wishes you to make known as widely as you can that the question of prayers for the so-called 'dead' will form an important part of His teaching. The Roman Church has not failed in that respect, in that she has remembered the souls in the spirit world, and recognized their continued conscious existence. But there are many people on the earth who would be described by their fellowmen as good Christians, to whom the idea is abhorrent, and downright wicked. Many people will tell you that 'the dead have no need of our prayers, but we have need of theirs.' They say that because they have still the false notion that death makes an absolute change, and immediately, in a soul's character and personality. Most of the people who object to the dead being prayed for, would also deny their ability to work and progress on another plane. They are the people who picture their dead friends as either asleep or doing nothing but singing hymns all daylong. It is such an utterly ignorant idea, mother, and responsible for the way in which so many souls in the spirit world, are forgotten by their friends - to a very large extent. Forgotten in this way: they are put out of the lives of their friends, never mentioned at home, referred to as 'poor so and so,' and things like that. It's so cruel, mother, and so utterly opposed to the truth. Souls in the spirit world, at all events on the plane where I am, and all those poor souls in the very sad places, want their people's thoughts and prayers, more than I am able to express to you. Do you know, mother, I have often had this said to me: 'My people have forgotten all about me, they never speak of me at home,' and the sadness in these words wrings my heart. What you have done for me, mother, and for ever so many others here, passes all description. Simply because you would talk of me as if I were still on the earth in my physical body, and utterly rejected the orthodox notion that 'Of course we don't know anything of the future state; we must simply say, "Thy will be done, the Lord gave and the Lord taketh away."' That's not what the Master will teach, and please make people understand it, mother. Those of us who have parted with our physical bodies, are still the same

people, undergoing further training for union with God - on another plane, and with still much to overcome that would drag us back. This is so important, mother, and why people reject the notion of prayer for us we cannot understand. Tell people, especially mothers, how awfully unhappy it makes their sons, when they are put out of sight in the home. Tell them how much they appreciate the tiniest bit of prayer from anyone on the earth, and then perhaps some mother will begin to think she would rather pray for her son, than let a stranger do it. Many of us spend a good deal of our time in comforting those souls whose loneliness on their first entry into spirit life is made so much worse by the attitude of their people on the earth. This message is meant for all people, mother, though of course some will say it is unnecessary, as they always pray for those 'within the veil.' Well, it isn't unnecessary; let even those people remember how very human we are, and that we want them to pray that we may be kept from danger here, as well as we did on the earth; danger exists here, you know, mother, and much temptation, but we have much more strength now to fight - and conquer. We are still striving, and shall be for many a year. That's all this morning, mother, but do talk to people as much as you can; it makes such a difference to so many chaps if their mothers continue to pray for them."

OCTOBER 21 st

"In every part of the world there are earnest souls who are looking out for Him, and longing for His appearance. Tell the orthodox Christian priest, that many of those wise virgins are what he would call 'the poor benighted heathen.' They are miles ahead of him, mother, in spirituality, though their skin may be black or yellow, and his white. So many of the priests and teachers of the people on your plane, either don't know, or else ignore, what tremendous stores of spiritual truths are laid up in the literature of many of the Eastern races. They smile if you say the Hindu, or the Buddhist, received the manifestation of God's power on the earth, thousands of years before our Master Christ came to Palestine. They have the idea embedded in their minds, that His manifestation was the first on the earth. Nothing of the sort, mother, the Master Christ was the last of the great world teachers - not the first. There have been other teachers since His time, but none who could claim to be called the World Teacher. Many of the devotees of the Hindu and Buddhist religions particularly, are full of the love to humanity that the Master Christ wishes to be universal in the world. Great abuses exist in both those religions, alike with the corruptions of the Western Churches. No priest of the West has the slightest right to sneer, or cast a stone at the faith of Eastern peoples. It is faith, mother, though mixed up with superstition. The people are not heathen; they are striving and have striven all these countless years, to come into closer union with God. As regards their idols: is there much difference between the images in the Roman Catholic churches, and the idols in the Buddhist or Hindu temples? Well, when the Master comes He will explain it all, and make the jaundiced eyes of so many of the so-called Christians - of the Western world - to have clearer and broader vision. How many of the orthodox priests have heard of the bibles of other races, or believe in them? If they

wish for spiritual advancement, they must get out of their grooves of spiritual prejudice and downright ignorance. There is much that is beautiful in all religions from the earliest times; and it is part of the Master's plan to weld together all that is pure and of good report in each separate creed of faith, and make it one harmonious whole. We feel that the Eastern peoples are much more ready to respond to the teaching than the souls in the West - so much to the shame of the West."

OCTOBER 22nd

"Much will be done to awaken people to a sense of their responsibilities in the way of caring for those less fortunate than themselves, by the help of this automatic writing. So many people have this power now, in varying degree, and the help they can give to the furtherance of this part of the Master's work on your earth, will depend on their own spirituality and unselfish motives. Not many of the writers realize what a tremendously solemn thing this gift is; and as they treat it, so the results will correspond. I mean that if a medium takes it lightly and frivolously, only foolish and irresponsible messages can be written through her. It must be regarded as a gift from the Almighty God, for the purpose, first of all - the ideal for which the Master is coming again - to make known to people on your plane. All that comes through to you, mother, is by express permission of the great God Himself.

"One of the great spirits from the very high spheres told me such a beautiful thing the other day. He said that all mothers are really very near to the Master Himself, because of their mother love. He said it was the purest kind of love there is, even among those mothers who fall so terribly short in their duty towards their children, because their love was the least tinged with selfishness. And he said that some day in your world, women are going to take a far higher place in the evolution, and construction, of the future. This great spirit told me another thing, mother. He said that many women will come forward as champions of the poor and oppressed, and will have the power to right many grievous wrongs against other women. And also that in the far-off ages which are yet to come, women will rank as the pillars of the State, and men will take a comparatively lower place. The old idea of the dominant male will have to give way to equality of the sexes in all matters relating to things moral and political on your plane, and mothers will rank as equal with the fathers, concerning the children of the State.\* Wasn't it interesting, mother? Although I don't know much about these kind of things I like to hear this great spirit talk about them. And it is so bound up with the Master's teaching, mother, although it looks something apart. The degradation of women on your plane in many countries, is a subject that distresses Him very much, both on account of the women who suffer, and the responsibility of the men who allow it. There is no such thing as distinction in wrong-doing between egos, and that will be dearly taught. It all comes back to the great truth of previous existences. Many a woman is suffering now in her woman's body for the wrong she did to another woman, while she was incarnate in the physical body of a man. These are very big things, aren't they, mother? and I have

still so much to tell you, but as I have told you before, only a little can come through at a time....”

\* See Light, Nov. 23rd, 1918, on front page referring to Private Dowding’s book, which I have not read. - JESSIE PLATTS.

OCTOBER 22nd (6 o’clock)

“There will be a tremendous Allied victory very soon now, which ought to be the last blow the Germans will be able to face. Look out for the papers, mother, and remember my message, when you see it in print!

OCTOBER 23rd

“We are told that many people will retard their own progress by failing to continue their efforts to make good. What happens is this: the spiritual part of the ego does not get enough spiritual force to keep going, so to speak, and that gives the Blacks a chance to come in. It makes an enormous difference to the soul who realizes the existence and power of the evil forces. That soul then tries to keep always on the alert for any attack, however subtly it may be conceived. But the man who denies the existence of these powers rests entirely on himself, and very often falls a willing victim to them, through his own wilful blindness to their existence. This is an important message, mother, so please write it as carefully as you can. The evil powers are fearfully active on the earth just now, they swarm round all men and women, especially those who are of weaker fibre than the rest, and nothing gives them greater pleasure than to lead them into wrong-doing, especially spiritual wrong, such as denying the existence of God and our Master Christ. Sometimes they attack a very able clever person, and induce him to write books and plays, which are capable of doing an enormous amount of harm.

“That is one of the deadliest weapons these brutes can use, because often the writings are very clever, and people enjoy reading them. It is always their endeavour to make black appear white, and some people have to fight tremendously hard against their influence. It is to those people specially that this message is sent, to those who are attracted by the cleverness of evil. To them the Master says, ‘Be sober, be watchful, because your adversary goeth about as a roaring lion, seeking to devour whom he may.’ Be always on the look-out, and never mind if you are beaten ninety-nine times, get up and fight the hundredth round. That is what is so pleasing to the Almighty God and the Master, mother, the constant readiness to fight, in spite of many defeats. The time will come when that valiant ego will not be the vanquished, but the victor. And, mother, there is something else I want to say, but it is rather difficult to get it through to you. The Master wants men to know that He is fully conscious of the power of evil, and went through all His earthly lives fighting, and struggling, as so many are fighting and struggling now. He was exposed to all sorts of trials, and finally overcame. The Master wants it very specially brought home to people, mother, that as He conquered, so can they. He knew what it was to wrestle in

prayer with the Almighty God, and to feel sometimes that the fight was almost too much for Him. But He kept on trying, mother, and that's what He wants every soul on the earth to do. My message must be given, mother, though it may much upset the orthodox notion of the great Master Christ."

OCTOBER 24th

"The Master wants you to let people know, mother, that His coming will be known by many curious and wonderful events that will take place on the earth. Several flaming tokens will be seen in the sky, and quite ordinary folk will experience a sort of strange adventures connected with the other side. We know there is a marked increase already, in the number of people who are keen on things connected with the future life. The Master will talk much about that life when He comes, mother, and souls will know that knowledge of that plane of existence, is not to be withheld from them. All souls will be taught the necessity for fuller knowledge. I really mean that word, mother, it is necessary for people on the earth to know of the conditions of life here. This is the reason: it would save so many souls from so much that is not exactly terrifying, but very trying when they first come over here. Do you know, mother, there are all sorts of definite evils to be faced here, even for those of us who have not to undergo a very long training, and, for those who must be more severely disciplined, the dangers and terrors are very great indeed. All the terrors come from a man's life on earth; they take form, and torment him in every possible way. Of course, the man has no physical body to be hurt, but he can suffer just the same. When I was working in the very sad places I saw a little of what I am describing to you, and am allowed to mention it to you now. Really wicked people do suffer most awfully when they reach the spirit world. There was something at the bottom of the old Calvinistic idea of a place of torment, only it means mental suffering. There is no burning fire, mother, only the remembrance of all the wrong the man has done on the earth, scorches the soul like a real flame. Some souls in the very sad places who have a terrible amount of bad Karma to work off, have been there for hundreds of years, mother. Nero is one of them, and that awful person Herod the Great is another. They cannot be helped much until the knowledge that they deserve their penance comes to them. Always near them are the powerful spirits from higher worlds, waiting and praying for that time to come, because, although these souls are suffering so terribly, it is not ordinary punishment, but a consequence of their own actions in past lives. And in the fulness of time, black with wickedness as they are, they will work through, and ultimately reach the higher spheres. My message is a sad one to-day, but it is true and necessary, because there are people on the earth who deny the possibility of suffering after death; they say the wicked people are annihilated. They are not, mother, all souls are trained for ultimate perfection, and union with God, be they saint or sinner on the earth. No ego is annihilated, all progress, and all will some day be white as the newly-fallen snow. Sin blackens, but it cannot destroy....

OCTOBER 25th

“The manner of the Master Christ’s coming will be utterly unlike what it was before. You will hear of wonderful teaching being given by certain people, perhaps not by priests of the Church at all; of wonderful cures of physical ailments, and of wonderful discoveries in the scientific world. All of these mean the Master’s Presence - His actual Presence - on the earth. You will hear of people having wonderful psychic experiences; some will say, ‘I saw the Christ.’ Well, mother, take heed to it all, and look out for Him day by day. One of the abuses that He will reform is the practice of absolving sins by payments of money. This refers to souls who are in the spirit world. It’s rather difficult to get through to you, mother, but I’ll try to explain it as well as I can. It is one of the customs of the Roman Catholic Church, and is called the saying of Masses for the dead. Priests are paid to do that, and the object is that the time of the training of those souls may be shortened. It can’t be done, mother, priests and people are both deceived; perhaps the priest isn’t, if he is enlightened, but his error is then greater, as he continues to take money for something he knows is untrue. Many people have believed this doctrine for very many years; they will have to give it up now. Nothing can shorten the time of the soul’s discipline but his own efforts; never forgetting that those efforts are watched and encouraged by the Master, and every help is given. My Master is anxious that the people should be taught of this error, because His teaching will turn very largely on the responsibility of the ego towards himself. Do you understand that, mother?”

(“Yes, I think so, darling.”)

“It means the value of the soul’s independence. That’s it mother, every soul working out to the very, very end his own destiny. Props of every kind will go as necessary for the ego’s advancement, saving always prayer to the Almighty God and the Master Christ. And, mother, among other things connected with this particular Church is the idea of priestly absolution, with the necessity for the soul’s confession to the priest. All of it will go, nothing will stand between the ego and the Master. Can’t you see the grandeur, and the wonderful simplicity of it all, mother?”

(“Yes.”)

“It does not mean that services will be done away with, there must be something of that sort for many a long day, but the meaning underlying them all will be known, and the ultimate union with the Almighty God begun on the earth. All this is hard for me to pass on to you, mother, but it will get easier as we both develop. Union with the Almighty God is such a tremendously high ideal, that neither you nor I can approach it yet.”

OCTOBER 26th

“Will you do all you can to make people understand that repentance for wrong-doing must be accompanied by a righting of the wrong done - if in any way it is possible? It is not enough to say ‘I’m sorry,’ and to leave the injury still unrepaired. While men

are on the earth in their physical bodies is the opportunity to make up to others any harm that they may have caused them. They must not wait for their entry into spirit life, for the chance of repayment. It can be done then, but it is ever so much harder, and takes a very long time indeed sometimes. Every soul on the earth should forgive an injury of thought, or word, or deed, as quickly as possible, and those who have been guilty of the injury, should lose no time in owning up, and making it right as far as they possibly can. Forgiveness of harm done by one ego to another, and full reparation made to the injured party, is of very great importance to the soul on your earth, for two reasons. First, because it helps forward his journey on the upward arc, and, secondly, because it goes a very long way towards peace and amicable relations with others on your plane. The sting of unkind thoughts and deeds and words, and the permanent harm, lies in the fact that they are so often allowed to slip out of the memory of both injured and injurer. The after result will be the same. The one ego must forgive the other, and sometimes it is harder for the injured party to accept the forgiveness than for the injurer to offer it. You've muddled that, mother, it should be the other way round; never mind, just put it right when you copy it. And then there is the question of bringing many people to say they are quite sure their sins are forgiven, and that sin has no more power over them, That is a doctrine held on your plane, and called being converted.' Well, mother, it is an altogether mistaken way, of expressing a certain keen sense of the knowledge of the spiritual strength, which has been poured into them from our side, at certain times, and under certain conditions. Sometimes it does make an honest ego quite different in his way of living, and by his own constant efforts to climb higher 'his sins are for given,' to use the ordinary expression. But there are terrible dangers connected with that very sudden change of front, mother, so many people cannot control themselves at those times, and give way to all sorts of excitement, and that condition makes them very liable to all sorts of dangers from the evil powers. It is possible then for one of the Blacks to take possession of the physical body of the ego, and cause him to do the most extraordinary and unwise things. Any wild excitement, any frantic outburst of calls on the Almighty God, or the Master, are sure signs that other forces beside the good powers are very hard at work indeed. The Master strongly condemns any outburst of that kind, and this message is sent as a warning to the earth that that kind of thing is utterly foreign to His teaching, and not to be tolerated for a moment. Much of that kind of thing has happened in the past, and, after the first violent explosion of feeling, has vanished like a dream, and no good whatever has been done to the majority of the egos who allowed themselves to be carried away by such hysterical enthusiasm. My Master's coming will not require any ebullition of spiritual excitement on the part of the people.... No false excitement will be wanted when the Master comes, only deep thankfulness for the privileges again afforded to the earth, and earnest willingness to believe in His teaching...."

OCTOBER 27th

"Now for my real message. I'm still awfully busy on the battlefields of France, there

is still terrible fighting ahead, mother; \* the Germans won't give up till they are absolutely forced, and it would not be wise for the Allies to allow it. Some of the souls who are coming over here now, earned their incarnation in that nation doomed to go down to posterity as these infamous Huns, by their behaviour in past lives. All the worst of the men of all nations who put lust of power, and disbelief in the Almighty God and our Master Christ, incarnated in Germany, and from them has come this overwhelming mass of bigoted intolerant cruelty to any ego, standing in the way of their own material advancement. They were ripe for the entry of the Black Forces on an unlimited scale, and willing to be governed by them. The result of the combination - the powerful influence of evil, and their own willingness to accept the evil - has been dearly seen in the way in which they have conducted themselves during the War. The evil influence penetrated men and women alike, and will hold on to the very last gasp. It is such an important object-lesson of the awful power of evil on the earth, to all the rest of the people in the world. Cruelty, lust, merciless severity towards hundreds of thousands of innocent defenceless human beings, has been the outstanding feature of the behaviour of the Germans throughout this war.

\* This came through before I saw the Observer. - JESSIE PLATTS.

“My Master wants people to be taught that they are wrong who say there is no such thing as a devil; there is not one devil, but myriads of them, mother, all seeking to do the utmost harm they can to people on the earth, on account of the hate they bear towards the Master Christ. Don't you think that, if people realized that, it would help them enormously to fight for Him? We think so here, and we are so glad He has permitted this message to come through. He only smiles a little sadly when He is told how indignant we are for Him, for of course He is much too kind to blame anybody, but we know He is awfully pleased when He hears of a battle that has been fought for Him, and the victory gained. The fact of the fight pleases Him too, mother, if perhaps the ego was not strong enough to conquer that time. And, of course, my message will make people say 'Why does not the Almighty God destroy these evil powers if He is omnipotent?' Well, mother, it's just this: if the evil were destroyed by God, the evolution of man on your earth at present would stop dead. There would be no need to struggle, with nothing to struggle against. Automatic goodness would be the result, which is not what the Almighty God intends. His plan is, that through endless trials, and many failures, man at last obtains his final victory, and stands before the Great Ruler of all the worlds, in all the cleanness, the beauty, and the strength, of the Master Christ Himself. A magnificent conception, mother, of the possibilities of the human ego, and probable, no, not probable, but certain of fulfilment. Can't you see it, mother?”

(“Yes.”)

“Well then, do explain it to people, and tell them that because the great God chose to withhold His omnipotence in that direction, on man reflects the greater glory. Not an automaton - a free agent, with the seeds of immortality and divinity contained in

his ego, from the very beginning....”

OCTOBER 28th

“Up till now very little has been taught about the conditions of life here, partly because of the ignorance of the teachers, and partly because the idea had firmly taken root in people’s minds, that it was a wicked thing to attempt to learn. All that was just nonsense, mother, and no good to anybody. When the people know that the spirit world is only another part of the material, just as much as America is part of the old world, though with the sea between, they will at once realize that persons on our plane are just as much alive as they are on yours. That will, in time, remove the fear of death, and make the passing from one plane to another, as natural as crossing the Atlantic. Then as time goes on, many more people will develop the power of clairvoyance on the earth, until at last the evidence as to the reality of spirit life, and communication with souls on your plane, becomes so overwhelming that even the most hardened sceptic owns he believes. Almost everybody, probably unconsciously, clings to the idea that where we live is some place hung up in the sky! It is so funny to us, mother, but we sympathize with those mistaken ideas all the same. When the Master Christ came back to His home in the spirit world, He didn’t go up into Heaven as the priests have taught, and caused to be printed in your Bible, but He simply dematerialized, and so faded from the sight of the apostles, because they were not developed enough to be able to see Him out of the physical body, and returned to the very highest plane, from which He had descended. That is the proper explanation of what is called the ‘Ascension’ but it did not take place for a much longer time after the death of the disciple Jesus, than the Christian Bible has it. The disappearance of the Master Christ from the earth, had nothing miraculous about it, mother. It was just the ordinary result of certain laws and powers which He could control and exert, and when, and where, it pleased Him to do so. When His work was finished in the body of Jesus, He still remained on the earth, till He had flung His influence far and wide. When He comes this time, one of the most important points of His teaching will be the meeting of friends who have loved each other with a very deep affection. Nothing binds people, mother, when they live here, but love, and attraction, by reason of the same pleasures and tastes, and modes of work. Family ties do not exist because they belonged to the same family on earth. I mean that no one is chained to unworthy relations because of the relationship. That is rather an urgent fact to press home to people, mother, because we know here that the probability of being obliged to live with people whom you failed to love on earth, is a very real trouble to some folk. They need have no fear. Purely physical ties are broken by physical death. Nothing lasts but warm affection for souls of like promise as ourselves; that is as certain as the other. Love of one soul for another is indestructible. Sometimes when friends meet after death, they may have to part for a little while, for the newly arrived soul to go on with his training, but both know the separation is the best thing for them, and are willing to work and wait. Some will say that that is done on earth. Quite true, but differently - and so infinitely harder-at

least at present. Because, on my plane, news of one's friends can be had from time to time, and on your plane, though news does come from us to you, and vice versa, yet the world at large does not yet believe in the message or the messenger. You can help, mother, as you are doing, by simply saying quite casually, 'I had a letter from Tiny this morning.' People may gape at you, but never mind, they will see that you are certainly honest when you say that, and in time they will come to believe you."

OCTOBER 29th

"I'm here, mother. Well, what about the news in the paper this morning? \* Didn't I tell you a few days ago that you would hear of a great Allied victory very soon, and also that Austria would capitulate, and then another Power would follow? † Well, you believed that message anyhow."

("Don't rub it in, old man.")

\* See Tiny's message of October 22nd. - JESSIE PLATTS.

† Allied victory in Italy. See The Times, "Austrian Note." - JESSIE PLATTS.

"No, mother, I won't, but you do deserve a small reminder.... Among other things that must be altered when the Master comes is the inequality of method applied to the punishment of offence. Sometimes a judge will pass a very heavy sentence for some offence, and another a very light one for the same thing. The Courts of justice want reform very badly; the present system, though much fairer than that in any other country, is capable of much improvement. That is particularly the case in certain kinds of offences. A man can be fined, only, for brutally beating his wife, but sent to penal servitude for burglary; that is a glaring inconsistency, and one of the reforms the Master will talk about. That particular thing will probably vanish with the real emancipation of the female ego - wife-beating, I mean, mother. It's a relic of the long-ago, when woman was considered man's chattel, to be bought or sold, or treated exactly as the man thought fit. Ages before that time it was not so; woman held the higher place, and we know here that she will regain it - before very many years. Over here there is no difference between the egos, no thinking or speaking of the 'weaker vessel,' they all stand on the same level. Of course there is a difference between those who have been mothers in their last earth life, and the same with husbands and wives. I can't explain the difference exactly, mother, only that the bond between them is so much stronger. This only refers to those joined by the strong tie of warm affection, there is practically no link, other than that. And it is strongest of all, between those souls who have come down all the countless years of earth life together. It is like that between you and me, and Jack, mother, we have always been together, and always shall be. (Bruno told me the other day that you were helping Molly a lot, although she does not know it yet, but he says she will understand quite well some day, and that it will be of the very greatest assistance to her, in her next earth life.) justice for an, mother, equal justice, is one of the chief things to be made sure of on your plane. It means a most tremendous upheaval, but

it is absolutely necessary for the raising of the spiritual ideal. Women must no longer be left to bear alone the burden of the wrong-doing, in which men have shared.”

OCTOBER 30th

“Well, mother, I’m here as usual, just by your chair, and touching your arm as you write. Never mind if you can’t see me, you know I am here, don’t you?”

(“Yes, old man.”)

“Well, that is all that matters. Now for my special message for the book. Will you tell people please, mother, that all works of charity will be judged by the motives underlying them. Those that are run by wealthy society women for the sake of excitement, or cheap notoriety, will be ruthlessly condemned. There is a great deal of that kind of thing going on now, in connection with war charities. There are some women philanthropists, so-called, whose one aim is to see their photograph in the daily newspaper, and described as organizing this or that charity for wounded or disabled men. It is generally one which necessitates much advertisement, and much fine clothing. Nothing can help forward any woman’s spiritual progress, unless she is actuated by single-minded desire to do good to suffering humanity. She may be steeped to the ears in war charities, or any other kind of charity, but it will avail her nothing, if her motive is to attract attention to herself. Much good is being done by hundreds of women who are just doing their work for the Master quietly and unobtrusively, very often failing to get their due recognition, and not minding that in the very least, content just to work in a very small corner of the vineyard, and humbly receive their penny at the end of the day. This message is to show the wide difference there is in the eyes of the Master Christ between these two types of workers, in the name of charity. Some of you people on the earth lay yourselves open to the very violent attacks by the Black Forces, whenever your motives for your actions are not pure, but much mixed up with thoughts of personal advantage. The evil powers are always on the alert to creep in between the chinks of your armour, and they take every opportunity of making to themselves a convert, when good actions are controlled by unworthy motives. It is awfully easily done, mother, and that is one of the traps which the Master is anxious people should learn to avoid. All really good actions spring from love to the Almighty God and the Master; nothing can foul them. Do not let people believe that old saying ‘Charity covereth a multitude of sins.’ It is such a silly thing to say, mother, because there would not be a multitude of sins if the real charity was there! The spurious kind one passes by with no more than a glance.”

OCTOBER 31 st

“An important part of the Master’s teaching will be raising the standard of morality among the so-called ‘upper classes,’ and making the man equally guilty and responsible in the eyes of the law, and society, as the woman. There is an inequality at present, which is terribly unfair to the woman, and responsible for the backward

state of evolution on the earth. All this has come about through ignorance of the power contained in the feminine half of humanity, and the weaker physique. It is a cowardly attitude on the part of the male ego, and one that needs much reforming. So many mothers on the earth would think nothing of marrying their daughters to a man who was both immoral, and a drunkard, provided he had plenty of money. That is one of the great blocks in the way of spiritual progress, mother, this awful condition of materialism - the worship of money for what it can bring, and not for the good it can do. My Master wants it made known to everybody, that this modern rush for wealth, and wilful giving up of every high and lofty aspiration in the effort to get rich, is a great grief to Him. The people who behave in that way are laying up for themselves such a long and severe discipline, and He knows it, and cannot help them, while their hearts are full of nothing but lust and greed of gain. Those people who come over here in that condition to which they have brought themselves, have a most miserable time, mother. You see a great deal of the pleasure that money can bring, affects the physical body only, and with that gone they have only the memories and the longing left, and cannot satisfactorily gratify them. You can imagine that their sufferings are very real indeed, and if to that is added the good they might have done with their money, and let the chance slip by, you will see their load is a very heavy one; inability to satisfy bodily cravings, and mental anguish too. They have a long discipline, those people, because of the selfishness that was the main thing in their lives. When they at last realize the utter mockery and emptiness of all that once appeared to them absolutely necessary, they can be helped - but not till then. Now, mother, don't let anyone get the notion that a rich man must suffer simply because he is rich. That is quite wrong. The rich man only suffers in the spirit world, if he has been selfish with his riches, and thought of nothing else but his wealth. People used to have the idea of that happening to the rich man, and the corresponding one, that a poor man would be happy and comfortable after death, because of his poverty. Nothing could be more unlike the reality. Once again let me tell you we all make our own environment, and it is on our motives while in those particular surroundings, and the way in which we conduct ourselves, that our happiness or unhappiness depends, on our entry into the spirit life. Riches are no bar to happiness on this side, poverty has no claim. This is rather a necessary message, because false teaching has been given on those points, and made the position very unfair to many wealthy God-fearing egos. It is extraordinary to us how the words of the Master that He spoke long ago became contorted, and altogether different to the real meaning, almost as soon as they were uttered

NOVEMBER 1st

"I'm here, mother. I came like a shot when you were ready, and I am so anxious to talk this morning. Are you not convinced, mother, now, that I was right when I told you of the great Allied victory that was coming, British and Italian together, and that two Powers would surrender very soon after Bulgaria's capitulation. Don't think the War is over though, mother; Germany will fight on a bit longer. There is still some

tough work ahead.

“There is still much to learn about the wonderful nature of our Master Christ. Do not let anyone have the notion that He is too far off, and too highly developed, to be able to hear your prayers on earth, or to help individual prayer. People can believe that He helps on a large scale, but they sometimes do not find it easy to believe also, that He literally does come into personal relationship with every soul who wants His help. The nature of the great Master Christ is like an ever-increasing, ever-spreading ripple on a pond, mother, taking in all the little bits of leaves, and twigs, and anything else that may be on the surface, and reflecting everything from above. I’m afraid that isn’t an awfully good analogy, mother, but it is the best I can think of at present, as it isn’t easy to get this through to you. All you must remember, and make others remember too, is that our Master possesses the power of being able to attend to the prayers of many individual souls at the same time, partly because thought is so amazingly rapid here, even on our plane, and of course it is intensified and magnified a million times when such development as our Master’s has been reached. My message is sent to comfort the earnest thinkers who have not been able to bring themselves to understand the possibility of coming into communion with Him individually. Don’t let them have the slightest fear, but remember also that the Master never forces Himself on any soul: He has too much to do, but the instant the soul makes the tiniest advance, on that instant comes His response.

“The Master also wants it understood that the teaching of so many priests on your plane about what they describe as ‘original sin,’ and which they say is washed away at baptism, is a mistaken one. I told you something like this before in an earlier message, but I have been told to repeat it. Original sin, as the priests mean it, does not exist. What does, is the outcome of past experiences and tendencies, which shew themselves in each successive earth life, and those inclinations to wrong-doing which were not carefully checked, and struggled against in the preceding life, will shew in a marked degree in the following one, and produce results which are called sins, and described by the priests on your plane as ‘Adam’s inheritance,’ or something like that. I can’t quite get the right words through to you, mother, but you have an idea of the meaning, haven’t you?

(“Oh yes.”)

“That’s all right then, so I can just finish up. It is to say once more that all our actions are working towards the final end-union with the great Almighty God, and on our own efforts, or the reverse, depends the length of each separate pilgrimage.”

NOVEMBER 2nd

“Many of the thinkers and writers of the world are much nearer to the Kingdom of God, than the orthodox churchgoing people, and the priests who minister to them, simply because they are not bound by conventional limitations, but gladly let the spiritual part of them lie open to the blinding light of truth, as taught by the Master

Christ so many years ago, and so much obscured by time and perverse criticism. Well, it's a big job for you, mother, but you'll be helped. The particular thing I want to speak about to-day is the suffering of the Great Master Christ when He was living in the body of Jesus of Nazareth. All those three years our great Master was exposed to trials and hardships of all kinds, very rarely did He leave the body of His faithful disciple, and then only for a very short time. He left it finally on the night of the betrayal. Many people will wonder how such a mighty spirit as our Master Christ could possibly suffer. Simply because all emotions are born, so to speak, first, in one of the higher bodies, and the effect of them expressed on your earth through the physical body. That, by itself, is incapable of feeling or emotion of any kind: all is conveyed to it by one or other of the higher bodies, of which it is the sheath. The great Master knew what it was to be cold, and tired, and hungry, but all those discomforts were as nothing compared to what His holy spirit felt, when He saw how difficult it was to make anybody understand even a fraction, of what He came to teach. All great reformers have had to go through that, and the very worst of all to bear is the utter loneliness of spirit, the feeling that it is impossible to get in touch with any other human soul. The Master drank that cup to the dregs and knew what travail of soul meant. His satisfaction came, from His knowledge that it would all come right in the end: His sorrow, for the sufferings of humanity before the end was reached. Many people will dislike the idea of the Master withdrawing from the body of His faithful worker before the Crucifixion. Do you know why He withdrew, mother? I will tell you. His work was finished in that earthly body; there remained the final test for the disciple, Jesus of Nazareth. You remember the story of the Agony, don't you, mother. The disciple Jesus, great soul that he was, nearly failed then, but our Master was with him all the time, helping him and putting all the spiritual force into him that was possible, and the end of it was, as you know, that great death, that mighty unselfish death of the body on the Cross, and the gain to the disciple Jesus, the immortal glory of being the first conscious martyr to the cause of righteousness on the earth. He had been training to that end all his life, and made the supreme sacrifice gladly and uncomplainingly."

NOVEMBER 3rd

"Please tell people, mother, that the Master Christ takes the very greatest interest in everything that goes to make up joy and happiness in the world, and in things like art, as seen in painting pictures, and in music - especially in that. Do you know, mother, there is so much in music that helps the soul upward and onward. Of course I don't mean ragtimes and rotten stuff like that, which is only noise, and not music at all. Where I live with so many of my friends there is the most magnificent music you can understand, and we can all enjoy it, though some of us were entirely without musical appreciation on the earth. It is a sort of worship here, you know, a way of approaching the Almighty God. When I get more advanced, I shall be able to explain it to you better, because it is one of the mysteries of our life on this plane, not a mystery in the way of being mysterious as you would understand on the earth, but

with a deep and holy meaning. There is music of all kinds on the earth, only people can't hear any beyond the sounds given out by musical instruments and human voices. We can hear it, because we are clairaudient, and it is beautiful beyond expression. Some of the great services in cathedrals and churches are full of the spirit of the music we have here, Music can help wonderfully on your plane, mother, and when the Master comes He will talk about it among a great many other things for the uplifting of the souls on the earth.

“Do not be led away, mother, by any kind of criticism you may hear or read of the powers of communication between the planes. You know perfectly well it is true, so let it roll off you like water off a duck's back. I'm telling you this because you may be worried a bit in that way in the next few weeks.”

(“I'll remember, darling.”)

“Yes, just remember I warned you, and then no harm will be done. Now I must go. My love, mother. Tiny, rest now.”

NOVEMBER 4th

“The love of the Master for all humanity is limitless and boundless; it embraces all who have ever lived on your earth, and all who ever will. While the earth continues its evolution, so will the love of the Master for all its inhabitants. Sometimes it is a little bit difficult to grasp that fact, mother. People admit it in general, but are apt to start at the idea when it is brought to them in individual shape. I mean, it does seem a little hard to realize that the Master has the same affection for the greatest saint among white races - highly developed, pure-minded soul that he must have been, and the lowest savage in the Australian bush. It is simply because He knows that it is all a question of development and evolution, the possibilities are the same, though circumstances are so different. ‘Other sheep I have which are not of this fold’ was the way in which He explained it to the early followers. That was very necessary then, because of the scorn with which the Jews of that day, headed by their priests, treated all other nations. They have lived to see themselves scorned in return, even to this day. And the message is necessary to-day, mother, because there is a good deal to be altered in the manner in which some white people and so-called Christians, treat those nations of a different creed and colour. Many of the troubles that have arisen in the past can be traced to that colour prejudice, and the Master Wants people in the West to be brought to realize that colour is no bar to progress and evolution. But at the same time it must be remembered that great care must be exercised in regulating intercourse between the white and coloured races. Never must it be forgotten that Eastern ideas on many vital points of social intercourse, are fundamentally different to those of the West. It would not be right to force Western civilization and customs on a race, as yet unprepared to receive them, but it should come about gradually and cautiously. National prejudices must wherever possible be treated as very serious matters, and national customs, so far as may be, respected. Part of the Master's teaching will be on the union of the peoples of India, and those

of the white races. Political organizations and Civil Service servants, missionaries and teachers of all classes, must be ready to co-operate with the really enlightened Indian reformers, at the same time refusing to be annoyed by the hotheaded ignorant zeal, of fanatics of another class. Always remember that in the Master's sight there is no distinction of egos, only on your plane are differences of faith, rank, position, etc., necessary for the evolution of the world in material things. Equality in the sight of God and the Master, as regards these spiritual possibilities, long or short though the training may be."

NOVEMBER 5th

"Will you please be careful to let people know, mother, that no doubt whatever exists as to His coming and to the primary points of His teaching? Apart from explaining the real meaning of the present doctrines of the Christian faith, and the question of their little or great importance, He will deliberately and plainly teach the Western world, particularly, the truth of previous existence, and the consequences of actions done in the physical body at one time or another. Those two points are the foundation of all the rest. They were known dimly to the Jews of Palestine 2,000 years ago, and all the mistaken ideas, and even the blank ignorance of the many on your plane, regarding different planes and spiritual existence, are the result of the gradual dropping of belief in these great truths, There will be no difficulty of that kind in the East, and the Westerners are much more inclined to receive it now than would have been the case even five years ago. They will be taught that the Almighty God's plan for the salvation of souls, does not depend on the death of one particular soul in a barbarous, horrible manner, but on the working out, everyone for himself, of the great destiny to which he was committed in the very beginning of time on your earth.

"And, mother, I want to tell you something else this morning, and it is rather a sad message, but it is true, and I have been told to give it. It is this: all those souls on the earth who behaved falsely to others, who betrayed trusts reposed in them, who tortured helpless women and innocent children, who took money for the accomplishment of vile deeds, and crossed over to this side unloving and unrepentant, will suffer most horribly here. They will be sent to terribly dark, dismal places, and will be surrounded by all the hosts of the Black Forces, rejoicing in the sufferings of their victims. The very worst of all are sent to the very lowest level, far down beneath the surface of your earth. They have to stay in these awful places till they realise the depth of their own iniquity. When that time comes, and they can at least call upon the Master Christ to help them, they are only at the beginning of their upward climb. Do not let people think that directly a soul calls on the Most High God, or the Master Christ, he is released from that terribly sad place. He has still to work out the Karma he accumulated in his earth life, but there is this difference: the great spirits can help him now, though they were powerless before. Even the Master could not help till the soul asked Him, as even here no one is compelled to be good;

free-will still exists. The worst kinds of sufferings there, are the awful remorse and the appalling hopelessness. When the soul has reached that stage, though, his special Guide redoubles his efforts to influence him, because remorse does mean a little light in the soul, and shews that a glimmer of struggle for better things can be seen in him. When I was working in the sad places, I could not go down to the very saddest parts - the dangers were too great - but I saw enough to make me pity them all from the very depth of my heart, and to make me long so awfully to be able to help them. What it is like there now, we dare not think, because all the evil powers are so mad with rage at the downfall of their human dupes. But with all the suffering there, mother - and the Master wants that brought home particularly to people just now, there is no hopelessness in our hearts, because we know the end will be release for them all. The Master wishes me to say, mother, that this message is necessary to counteract the teaching of some people on the earth who think there is no such thing as punishment after death. There is, mother, but it is not punishment in the way they mean, it is simply consequence of actions, in other words, Karma. Sometimes an awfully bad man may come over here, and be obliged to go to the place he has earned, but if he has had a spark of affection in him, for even only a dog, and been kind to him, that flicker of love will help him enormously. And, mother, there is some very special teaching coming through to you about animals soon, and their place in the evolution of the world, and it will surprise you very much."

NOVEMBER 6th

"And now I will give the special message.\* Never mind the fire, mother, you can see to it when I've finished."

\* I looked at the fire, which was burning very badly. - JESSIE PLATTS.

("I am thinking Molly will come home cold.")

"Yes, but don't trouble about it now. The Master Christ wants you to tell people, mother, through this book of messages from me, how important it is that people should know about the results of our actions done in the physical body. When they really grasp and believe that they will have to account for the way in which they have occupied themselves during their earth life, it will make them behave very much more wisely. Some of them, of course, will only be concerned with the penance after death, and won't consider it from the point of training and discipline, and will regard their lives from that standpoint. It is not a very high one, but perhaps it may be the best of which the ego is capable at that time. Let him not be judged. Then, of course, some will strive their utmost with the highest motives, knowing and understanding the law, and glorious goal. Well, mother, if you take all these different motives and lump them together (though it would of course be better if all took the highest view), you are going to have a very strong force working in the world for the uplifting of humanity. A man can hardly sweat his work - people in this life, and enjoy wealth won for him by other men and women, at starvation wages, when he knows for an absolute fact that he will some day feel for himself what they are suffering now. A

man could not deliberately wrong an unprotected woman, knowing that some day he will suffer bitter biting remorse for his cruelty, and not be able to make up for the wrong he had done in the way he would wish. So you can multiply all sorts of different cases and apply the same test nationally. It would ultimately lead to the abolition of wars on the earth, and most real love from one human being to another. It would not reach that pitch of perfection for a very long time, but it would eventually. People may say to you, mother, that this belief in the law of Karma, has not stopped wars in the past. Quite true, but they must remember that only a small portion of the dwellers on the earth have believed in it up to now, and they must also remember that much remained to be learned, from time to time. I mean that all wise teaching and profound truth, can only be taken in, and assimilated, when the individual or nation has reached the appropriate stage. No one can become a searcher after truth while still an infant: mature advancement is wanted for that. Do you see why I am giving this message this morning, mother?

("Yes, I think so.")

"Thank you, mother, you are getting a much easier channel to write through than you were. All this teaching about consequence of action is not anything new, really. The Master taught it when He came before, but the priests mixed it all up with the doctrine of a general judgment day, when they said the great God would appear in the clouds, and hold a sort of Grand Assizes! That picture, so extraordinarily materialistic, and so funny, in one way, put all intelligent truth-seekers off the idea of judgment at all, and even of the Almighty God Himself. They could not bring themselves to believe in any faith, which could present to them a perfectly pure and holy Being, in the guise of a Lord Chancellor! There is a lot to be said for the attitude of unbelievers on the whole, mother, and the priests have only themselves to thank for the fact that so many clever and brilliant thinkers deny the existence of God. All the glorious spiritual teaching the Master gave, and all His wise speeches, have been turned into grossly materialistic pictures. Even if the priests were conscious of the spiritual interpretation, they hid it from the common people."

NOVEMBER 7th

"I'm here, mother. Well, what do you think of the news this morning? \* Didn't I tell you that very likely the War would be over by Christmas, and even if the Germans reject the terms of the Armistice at the moment, they'll have to accept them very soon.

\* Germany sends embassy to Foch. - JESSIE PLATTS.

"All those people who deny the existence of our Master Christ, and profess their disbelief in a God at all, are deceiving themselves, and are allowing the deceptions to destroy all their spirituality. The Master Christ wants those people to be taught very carefully, just the simple truths of the Christ faith. I have purposely put that, mother, instead of Christian faith; there is such a lot of difference. He wants them assured as

emphatically as possible, that men are spirits, living for a time in physical bodies; they are immortal, indestructible. It is not enough to say that they are spirits, they must be shewn the truth in black and white. This can be done in a small way by these messages, mother, because it is plain that they come to you from someone on the other side. No person of any intelligence would say you sat down and invented them. And they must be told of the discoveries of earnest scientific men, and shewn the proofs. Of course, it will not be possible to convince every one of these wrong-headed people, but some will see they were mistaken, and thankfully give up all their old ideas. At the same time, the Master wants them told that their unbelief will make it very much harder for them when they come over here, unless they have allowed themselves to be influenced by faithful messengers and workers of the Master. I do not mean to say that these unbelievers must conform to all the dogmas of the Churches on your plane; the priests would say they must, or rather some of them would, but it is not taught so from this side. All that will be required of them is to believe in our Master's existence as supreme Ruler of your universe, and in the Great Almighty God who stands behind Him. A good many agnostics have been made so by the sight of so much suffering and misery on the earth, and they use the old cry: 'Why does God allow it if He really exists? How can a great All-Powerful Spirit allow such an appalling condition of things? He does not exist.' And so the old mistaken idea grows, and flourishes, and produces large crops of denial and ignorance, and sometimes awful blasphemy. Much of it will go when people are taught that they are responsible, and not the Almighty God.

"Just now I am back in my home for a short rest, and Bruno has been lecturing to us about the right view of evolution here. It is all tending to more complete intercourse with the Master Christ, and ultimately to union with God. We could not grasp that idea at all at first, as we thought it must mean loss of identity; and we could not reconcile that with all we had been taught (and know to be true) of the survival of human personality. Bruno has explained that to us, and I will try to explain it to you, mother, but it's awfully hard: Bruno said that we shall retain our individuality, we shall not be sucked up, as it were, into great spiritual force, and be quiescent as regards our own activities. But we shall be really a part of the Almighty God, sharing in all His wonderful powers, Creation and production. That is what union with Him means, mother. Millions and millions of stainless spirits, loving each other and Him, and ever working and labouring for all souls, whether on this planet or another. It's a colossal idea, mother, isn't it? and Bruno has told us not to dwell on it too much, as it is so remote, and so boundless in effect. But that's it, mother, and then of course we rather wanted to know a little whether there would always be humanity to help, but Bruno could not tell us, he said; but we might know this, that after a very long period of active evolution, there followed an equally long period of rest - on all the planes. Don't you think this is an awfully interesting message, mother? and isn't it different from the limited, restricted stuff that is being given out to people on the earth by so many priests and teachers, as spiritual food for them?"

NOVEMBER 8th

"I have gone back to my men in France, mother, and we are just waiting for orders. Doesn't that sound exactly as it used to? Well, it is just the same, only no German bullet can hurt me now; I am in the thick of it all, with no risk! And how wonderful it is, mother, all the men who gave their lives willingly are watching the result with me, and so many of my friends. We know that we didn't fight in vain for honour and righteousness on the earth, and we are so glad we were given the chance to play the man. Above all things, mother, you are not to let the thought of victory and peace, be clouded by any sorrow for us - that's another dodge of the Blacks. Remember how tremendously alive we are, how much we understand, and realize the colossal efforts that have been made, and the sacrifices of others, for the cause for which we gladly died. Remember, mother, that we shall march in triumphal procession, that we shall be present at thanksgiving services, and that we shall be there when Peace is signed. Tell other mothers that, and make them understand that we are sharing in all the rejoicings, and in all the thankfulness.

"You'll see me very soon now, mother; the Master thinks your development has progressed far enough for that privilege to be allowed you. Won't you be glad, mother?"

("Yes, rather.")

"And once you have seen me, I expect I shall be allowed to shew myself to you pretty often. Go on with the writing, mother, even if you do feel rotten sometimes. It doesn't mean much, really.

"Do not let people be tempted to look upon the New Revelation as something that has come to birth through the War, and will fade away when the bitter sorrow for friends who have left the earth, is softened by time. Nothing of the sort. All has been in training for the fresh teaching, and for the Master's coming for many, many years. There is a danger that people will take that view, and this message is to press home to them the falseness of it, and the harm that will result to themselves if they so consider it. All of this and much more is to be told to people, mother, about the life on our side, and conditions of communication, and will you please be very emphatic about this. Love of country, love of friends, love of all humanity - these attributes are to be enlarged and increased, till the result is seen in another Golden Age on the earth. The Master is on the earth now, mother, as I have told you many times before, and His presence will very soon be actually seen and felt. Very many of the very high spirits are working with Him, and chiefest of them is Jesus of Nazareth. I am told that there is a great deal more to come through to you, mother, about that wonderful spirit, but not just yet Please remember the absolute certainty of our active part in these closing scenes of the War, and our co-operation with you in A the thanksgiving - not as shadowy beings, but as living, active men. Now I must go.

My love, mother. Tiny, rest now."

NOVEMBER 9th

“I’m here as usual, mother. Now wasn’t I right when I told you the Blacks would turn and rend the Germans who had been their slaves so long? \* The revolution is spreading all over Germany, and it is only at the beginning now. That nation most truly sowed the wind; it is reaping the whirlwind.

\* See Tiny’s message of Sept. 17. - JESSIE PLATTS

“There is much to be taught to the people on your plane about the actual state after death. I mean the very first few minutes after the soul has left the earthly body. I am allowed to tell you a little to-day. First of all, no two people have exactly the same experiences, but all think they are still alive, that is, immediately afterwards. Those who have had to suffer very severe pain are so surprised to find they are well. I think that is one of the most astonishing things, mother. When I died, or rather when my body died, I remember quite well thinking I was still alive in the old way, and waiting to go forward again. (When that bullet killed me, you know, mother, we were trying to get back to our lines as we had been cut off from the rest of the regiment, and we had to proceed very cautiously.) Sometimes people feel awfully frightened at first, and very much alone, but that is only the case with those who never loved our Master or anyone but themselves, on the earth. And even those people are comforted and helped by their own guide, as soon as they are able to perceive him. Almost everyone rests for a time, perhaps only for a day or two, or perhaps weeks and months, it all depends on the circumstances of their passing. In my case I was killed outright, there was no pain, and no long illness to weaken any of my powers, but I had to rest for about a week, because the shock to my finer bodies of that sudden separation from my physical body, was very severe indeed. After people have rested, their guides come to them, and they are told what their training will be, and that when that is finished they will start on their appointed work for the Master. Before their rest, those who are united by very strong ties of affection, meet; and, mother, you can’t imagine the happiness of those meetings, even though the friends know that sometimes they have to part again. But it’s not the same thing as parting on your plane. And then, mother, sometimes most wonderful things happen when a specially beautiful soul passes over.

Do you know, it really is true that they are met by bands of most holy spirits, and with glorious music. It need not be a specially famous person on your earth, but my guide told me that it was the case when Roberts and Kitchener came over. They told me, when Kitchener came over, there was one of the most wonderful receptions the spirit world had ever seen, for anyone who had been an ordinary man. But there was Kitchener’s long record behind of duty done through countless years, and the swift passing at the last, an act of basest treachery on your earth, a most triumphal entry into ours. I may not tell you of any other people by name, but the Master has allowed me to mention these two great souls, and, mother, there is one other thing I want to say, and that is about the children. Those who came over when they were too young

to remember their own mothers, are brought to be recognised if there has been the bond of love, and those who remember their mothers, are told that the mother had come over at last, and they meet, and, mother, they know each other! Isn't that a glorious thing to know! It doesn't matter how many years have passed, or that the young baby has grown to full manhood, or womanhood, in the spirit world, or that the young mother is an old mother now, the recognition is mutual and instantaneous, if the bond of devoted affection is there.

“There is much to say about the life here, and I can only give you little bits at a time, but it is enough to help and comfort people on your plane, if they will allow themselves to be comforted. No one can be comforted against his will, but as I have said before, mother, try to get people to look at the death of the body as we do, and that is, in the light of a birth. Now just one small thing. Those people who have to undergo a very long discipline are allowed to see their friends for a moment, if the erring soul has been always remembered, perhaps by his mother, on our side. The sorrow of a spiritual mother who has seen the utter downfall and wreck of a son on the earth, is one of the saddest things to see in our world. At the same time, that mother knows the justice of the discipline, and can wait, and pray, and hope. Nothing can keep two souls apart who really love each other, and nothing but love can bring them together. One other thing. The Master wishes it to be told to people on your plane, that those men who have been responsible for plunging Europe (and the world) into the most awful war the earth has ever known, are deserving of the very profoundest pity. Utterly given over, though of their own free-will, to the power of the evil forces, utterly deaf, even now, to the very faintest whispers of honour or truthfulness, the future which they have earned will be such as no one on the earth has any idea of. It is known here; the awful suffering, the inexorable justice - ultimately, the redemption. All prayers should include offenders as well as friends and loved companions; they want it most.”

NOVEMBER 10th

“Are you here, Tiny darling?”

“Yes, mother, I'm here, and with much to say to you this morning. Germany has at last realized her doom; the exit of the Kaiser, and the Crown Prince, is only another step towards the extinction of the Hohenzollerns as rulers. The conditions of the Armistice, and Germany's reception of them, are known to us here, of course, but I am not allowed to tell you, although I know how much you would like to hear. Never mind, mother, whatever the Germans may do makes no difference; the War is over, evil is defeated, and the coming of the Master much hastened thereby....

“Now I will tell you some more about my life here and my work. All that is taught to us here is so much more interesting than anything we ever learnt on the earth. Even the ordinary chemistry which I rather liked at school, though I didn't do much, isn't a bit the same as the chemistry we are taught here. All particles, mother, do you know, have life in them, though they may be what you call inanimate on your plane.

It's a wrong description really, because everything is really alive, and slowly, very slowly, progressing upwards. My message may sound rubbish to you, mother, so I had better try to explain it a bit. What I want to say is this, that minerals have life, as well as vegetable and animal products, and that the lowest kingdom is gradually working up to development in the human kingdom. Does that sound more rubbish, mother? Well, it is a fact here, and the Master wants it known on your earth that all creation is alive, and all share in the Almighty God's scheme for it's ultimate salvation. I expect that will be a big pill for a good many people to swallow on your plane, mother, but they must accept it. And that brings me to the position that animals hold in your world and in ours. Animals are spirits, just the same as you or I, only in a very backward and retarded stage of evolution. That's a mighty big thing, Isn't it?

"That did stagger me, when they told me that an animal was a spiritual being. Well, many thousands and thousands of years ago, there were a certain number of egos who could not advance beyond the very rudimentary stages of evolution, and had to be left behind in the fresh cycle, or epoch. They could not be hurried: the Almighty God knew that; neither could they be included in the generations of the more advanced souls, immature though so many of these were. So they remained very much as they were for countless years, and are not yet evolved enough to take form as men, on your earth. They will, eventually, strange and fantastic as it may seem to you, mother. That brings out another duty very strongly - that of kindness to all these dumb souls. Many of them are far more intelligent than the brutes they call masters, who disgrace their advanced state and advantages, by their cruelty to a dog, or a horse, or any other animal. Well, they will suffer for it when they come over here; instead of the man ill-treating an animal, the animal will ill-treat the man! That's quite true, mother, although you may think it is a fairy tale; I've seen it ever so many times, when I have been in the sad places. But there's another side to the picture, mother, and that is the joy of animals in being with their masters again, when there has been real comradeship between them. You don't know how happy the Professor is to have Dan with him, and so is Stephen with his dog, and there are ever so many of my friends who have their pets with them. There is a special place for animal souls in the spirit world, you know, mother, where they are taken care of, and trained by special spirits appointed for that purpose. These spirits do not belong to our plane at all; they come from other planets, and work for the Almighty God in that way. Remember, mother, all creation is alive and working in the scheme for redemption, as some people call it, and as we say, the evolution of the world. This is an important message, mother, and I have more to say another time. My love. Tiny, rest now."

NOVEMBER 10th ("Anyone here?")

"Yes, mother, I'm here. My message is only a few words to-night, because you know I gave you a long one this morning, but I like to dash in when I have a few minutes to

spare on the chance of getting a word with you.” (“I’m awfully glad to see you, darling.”)

“Yes, I know you are, mother, and I think you know, can guess how glad I am to come. Well, everything is going on swimmingly, mother, for the Allies, but hasn’t Humpty-Dumpty had a fall! Don’t think me frivolous, mother, but you know I always try to crack jokes. The Kaiser’s fall is the worst punishment that could happen to him. Fancy being one of the common herd for the rest of his life on your plane! The deeper side of it I will not touch on to-night.... Now I must go. I’m off to France, mother, and may stay with my men until we march into Germany.

My love. Tiny, rest now.”

NOVEMBER 11th

“I’m here, mother. I’ve been trotting about with you all the morning, and enjoying the excitement of the people on the earth. Don’t be depressed because I’m not with you in the ordinary way, mother; it doesn’t make a scrap of difference, you know, and really we are ever so much more alive than any of you! I know you miss me, but, mother, buck up, and don’t let the Blacks chortle; they are trying their best to make you miserable, and they are working on you through your body....

“No better object lesson could be given to the people of England than the present state of Germany. No nation has ever reaped such a harvest of ill-done actions. Total eclipse, for many and many a year. There is seen to the full, the results of mad ambitions, ruthless policy, supreme selfishness. Let the rulers of England take heed. There will be much to settle, much to arrange on social and economic lines, and the task will not be easy. Let them beware of the lengths to which selfishness, pure and simple, is prepared to go. Let them remember the blood that has been poured out like water from rich and poor alike, to save the Empire. As all and each had a share in her redemption, so all must share in the reconstruction. Brotherhood must be the watchword, and the love of the Master, the token. There is much to arrange for the betterment of the working-classes, much to be settled of the future of the Labour Party, as it is called on your earth. Much help will be given from this side, in the peaceable solution of all these matters, but the Master wants all workers and rulers to remember that the time has come for an equal and just adjustment for the master and the workmen. Where existing conditions are bad, the State must see that they are altered; where harmony exists between employer and employed, see that that harmony is safeguarded from any violent attack on it by discontented influence, which is very often ignorant, and inflamed by party catchwords. Let peace on earth become a reality, not an empty formula. All that has been done for the relief of the oppressed, the freeing of down-trodden nations, the saving of alien people from alien overlords, are stepping-stones to infinitely higher things. Not many of us are allowed to tell these people a warning like this, mother, but the message came through to me from the Master, and I have to pass it on to you. There is great happiness on our plane to-day, and most triumphal waves are being set in motion

from us to you. Evil has been conquered, good is now supreme. Let us all give thanks, and say: 'Our Father, which art in Heaven, hallowed be Thy name. Thy kingdom come. Thy will be done, on earth as it is in heaven. Give us this day our daily bread. And forgive us our trespasses, as we forgive them that trespass against us. And lead us not into temptation; but deliver us from evil: for Thine is the kingdom, the power and the glory, for ever and ever. Amen.'

We have said that prayer ever so many times to-day, mother; it is a sort of thanksgiving here. Now I must go.

My love. Tiny, rest now."

NOVEMBER 12th

"I'm here, mother. Well, now you will believe all the messages, won't you, as you see that what I told you would happen in Germany some weeks ago, is really true. I told you, too, that we should march into Germany, and that is true, too, as you will see by the terms of the Armistice....

"There is no doubt at all that we are sharing in the rejoicings on the earth. That's a particular bit of work you can do here in Cambridge. We know there are crowds of people whose hearts are aching now with regret for their sons in the spirit life. Tell them, mother, please, that all of them know what is happening, and all of them rejoice that they had their share in bringing it to pass. Don't hurt them by putting them on one side, and thinking of them as dead.

"Now there are one or two little things I want to tell you this morning, mother. My Master's work on the earth has begun, as I have told you before, and you will notice before very long a thin stream of ideas in the newspapers, regarding this new teaching. The writers won't know they are being influenced from this side, but you will know it, mother, and it will all coincide with what I have told you. We know that different interpretations of the Christian Faith given in these messages, will produce very much opposition. The Master knows it well, and remembers the storm of execration that His beautiful teaching raised before. We don't ignore your position on the earth at all, mother, for though you are not the author, you are the instrument, and you may possibly have a good deal to endure (that is only by the way). The one thing that stands out clear as the sun at noonday, is the work for the Master that you are appointed to do, the crying need of thousands and thousands, for clear, definite teaching of the reason for earth life at all, and the existence, conscious and active, of all souls in the spirit life.

"The time has come for that teaching, whatever commotion it may cause. It cannot be hindered now - it must be told to the people; and they can refuse or accept it, but it must be offered to them. No work ever done for the furtherance of spiritual teaching was guiltless of the cause of strife on the earth, that followed by reason of the constant action of opposing influences. Put in the sickle, mother, the harvest of the world is ripe. Of course, you know these are not my words; I'm only repeating

the message as it was given to me. All of us are so anxious for the truth to be known - that truth which shall shake off the shackles which bind men so much to earthly ties and material interests, and which will bring them into the glorious liberty of the children of God. Not all of them will wish to be released from their accustomed slavery. Never mind, don't force anything on them; they will know some day. But to those who are ready and willing to accept the teaching the Master will give, remains a welcome far exceeding anything they can imagine when they come over to this side. Well, mother, that's all this morning, but never forget for one minute that I am alive, alive, alive! Mother, I'm shouting it, to make you understand, and so are all my friends! Now I must go. Tiny, rest now.

NOVEMBER 13th

“Now that people are rejoicing over the defeat of the Germans, we feel a little sad about it over here, at least those of us do who are not very far advanced. We do not want men and women to forget all that led up to that most awful judgment for actions, material and selfish, to an unbelievable degree. There is just a tendency that the root of it all may be covered up with rejoicings, and so lost sight of. Had the nations of the world put the service of God the Almighty, the All-Wise, first, and their own worldly advantage a very bad second, the War would not have been necessary. That is what the Master wishes me to tell you today, mother. The people on your plane have it in their power now, to decide whether this war shall be the last the world shall know. No nation can exist under the black shadow of force from another power. Will you try to explain to people that there must be safeguards, but there must also be willingness to co-operate for mutual good. The nations of the world will have enormous help given them, especially all the Allied Governments. The defeated nations must learn to recognise, as soon as they can, that judgment from God does exist on the earth. If they accept it humbly, they will start their upward progress again; if they continue to allow themselves to be influenced by the remaining militarists, the last state will be worse than the first. That is really no one's business but their own, interference from any of the Allies would be most unwise. But the whole point of my message is this, mother, that the War was an outcome of the result of putting everything on one side except love of material comfort, and declaring that force was the one and only ruling power in the world. The Master's teaching is diametrically opposed to all that, and has been ever since He came first as a teacher 2,000 years ago. Coming again the second time, He will preach the same doctrine, but ever so much more clearly and emphatically, and this time it will be spoken to great political powers, hard-headed men of business, capitalists, workmen, soldiers and sailors, rich and poor alike. All will hear the teaching, clear and concise, as to the path to be followed, untrammelled by false interpretation from a prejudiced priesthood.

“There is one point I wish to mention to-day, mother, and that is the Master will want my messages so published that they can reach the masses quite easily. He

wishes' them to be as widely known as possible. Do not let the knowledge of controversy, and some people's notions that the book will do harm stop you, mother, it's all nonsense, no one but the least intelligent could say such a thing. No one is forced to believe them, but the opportunity must be offered."

NOVEMBER 14th

"When the Master's work is very fully accomplished you will notice how much more ready people will be to listen, to talk on spiritual things. Up till now it has been hidden away by most folk, and looked upon as a subject that only concerned professionals, like priests and teachers. It will be very interesting to us to watch the change coming over people on your earth. It has begun already and you know how much it owes to influences over here. We feel so strongly ourselves, that even those of us who are not definitely concerned in that particular work, cannot help influencing too, though it is not our special job. We are so anxious that the great Master's work this time should be crowned with the result for which He laboured before the testimony of the world to His existence, and the life here. All of it is mixed up, mother, you can't separate one part of the teaching from the other, and it holds within itself all that men have toiled and striven and agonized to obtain. To us it is so extraordinary that all those who believe in the Master's teaching, the real interpretation I mean, should be looked upon so often as servants of the Black Forces. It was even so said of the Master Himself. Well, we shall see the results before very long, and as we read in your Bible, 'Every tree is known by its fruits.' No one who follows the command of the Master to love Him, and all men, as he would love himself, could by any possible reasoning be described as evil. The mistakes date so far back, though it was very soon after the Master's work on earth was finished, that certain people began to break away from the orthodox Church party, as it might have been called. And so it has gone on all down the years, the Church and persecution against freedom of thought, and desire to own no authority but that of the Master.

"I was telling you something about the animals here the other day, mother, and I said there was a great deal more to tell you about their evolution. They are looked after here, those who are advanced enough when they come over, but those who are very, very backward, just step back into what is called the group soul, and cease to own any individuality for a time. Later on they are born again, and continue their successive earth lives. When they are evolved enough to be trained in the spiritual life, it means they are very near their conversion into humanity, and when that is accomplished, they take birth in the physical body of a human mother, and commence their path upward in man's environment. It really is a big thing to take hold of, isn't it, mother, and yet you know it ought not to be so difficult for people to understand, because there are lots and lots of people on the earth who not only have the characteristics of certain animals very strongly marked, but resemble them in appearance! Not all of the animals realize they are developing, this knowledge comes

to them very gradually, and there is just one point I want to mention, it's about killing animals for food. That's all right, and in order with the Almighty God's scheme of progress for them, but it must be done humanely. Anything that tortures is forbidden; the killing of animals for sport only, is a diabolical invention, and should be stopped immediately by the law of the land. It could not be done if people reflected for one minute. Take tame staghunting for instance; could anything possibly be more cruel, or unlike the Master's plans for love to all creatures? It brutalizes humanity too, mother, and lowers the ideal of perfect purity and spiritual-mindedness. There's another thing too. Those men who hunt animals now, for their own selfish amusement, totally regardless of the sufferings of the animals, will in their turn be hunted when they come over here, so don't fail to include this message in the book! I'm sending it by command of the Master on behalf of the dumb spirits of the world's creation....

“And, mother, always watch for the Master; I do so want you to see Him and talk to Him too. You need not be a bit afraid, mother, He's so wonderfully kind, and would understand all you felt. But do be watchful, mother, you might see Him any moment now....

NOVEMBER 15th

“All that will happen when the Master comes, mother, is the way that has been pointed out for so long, the narrow way that leads straight up to God. Do not for one moment imagine that His new teaching will make life any easier for souls on your plane, it won't do that, but it will shew the reasons for so much that is.... You've no power, mother, wait a bit. Yes, that's it, your physical body wants more force. Never mind, mother. I'll come again later on.”

NOVEMBER 16th

“The new teaching will not make life any easier on your plane, but it will help men to follow the narrow path that leads straight up to God. There are many ways of reaching Him, you know, mother, and some souls do not always take the same one as the other souls, but many of the paths mean much hardship, much tumbling, and many, many falls. Only one path is free from them, but it is hard to follow, because it is very steep and narrow. There are no attractions for the material side of the soul, only those of the spirit, so to those who are deadened to all finer impulses, it is very unattractive. To those who can see, the possibilities far outweigh the discomforts. People used to be taught that only one way led to God; that isn't exactly true, mother, because in the end all paths lead to Him, but there is only one direct way, and that is what the Master will explain when He comes, and wants people to begin to understand now. It is known over here as the Way of Renunciation. That sounds awfully hard, mother, but I'll try to explain it a bit. First of all it means giving up everything that would keep us back from the very highest ideal of spiritual welfare, and by that I mean putting the proper value on it, always putting first, service to the Master, and to humanity. It does not mean giving up all earthly ties and retiring to a

hermit's cell, or anything like that, but it does mean using all our earthly happiness as something in trust, and preparatory to the real life here. Everything that is good and beautiful on the earth is to be enjoyed by the soul while still incarnate in the physical body, and a spirit of cheerful thankfulness to be cultivated by all. Glorious sunsets, beautiful flowers, moonlight on the river, mean beauty, and beauty is worship, and thought of God, in material form. The hardships of the narrow way come from the fight the soul must wage against the desires of the lower nature, and the continual effort to keep looking to the highest, but that will not be so difficult when they realize that earth life is but a training school for the most wonderful life here. The narrow way was the Master's way, mother, and He wants me to repeat that as He walked along it, never heeding the temptation to take the broad path, always pressing forward, always keeping His mind fixed on the goal, union with God, so can they. Now, mother, I want to say one other thing. The way some people choose may be the only way for them, as far as their evolution allows, though they may not know it; they are not ready for the very straight and narrow way, so they have to take the longer, and, as they will find out, infinitely harder way, though it looked so smooth at the beginning. Well, the Master does not wish those people condemned. They are acting up to the ideal they have reached, and will realize in time how much better it would have been could they have understood what renunciation meant, earlier in their evolution. And, mother, renunciation does not mean stopping affection, and choking down all love. Quite the reverse. It means so much love and service for the Master and all humanity, that everything sinks into absolute nothingness compared with it. That is true renunciation, true self- sacrifice, mother, not utter oblivion of all affection, but an infinitely higher conception of what affection really means: in two words, the Love of God.

“Now I must go. My love, mother. Tiny, rest now.”

NOVEMBER 17th

“Never was the earth in more bitter need of a Power outside itself, for the great work of reconstruction that must be carried out in the next few years. It is too gigantic a task for men alone, they will be helped from this side, but above all they will be helped by the presence of the Master on the earth in form and substance. Much of the authority of politicians of your earth, especially of the English rulers, will be strengthened in ways unknown to them. Many of their plans for the uplifting of the masses the equalizing of burdens, the proper relations that should exist between master and man, or Capital and Labour, as it is called, are being matured here, and sent by thought influence into the minds of all the enlightened well-balanced men of the workers on your earth. Nothing could alienate the national affection for just and upright dealing, more than any faltering or hesitating course on behalf of those who faithfully served the country and the Empire, in her hour of greatest need. The chance has come for England to set the rest of the nations the highest example of courage in peace, as well as courage in war. With all the settlements of things

connected with housing, and pensions, and industries, comes the question of spiritual teaching and advancement. The Master wants me to tell you, mother, that the Church, as well as the State, has the chance offered to her. We know there are some of the priests who are daring to take it, but they are few and far between. Will you please make known to them how much we love them here for their courage and faithfulness? Tell them the Master knows it all, and He will most surely comfort and strengthen these faithful servants. When the Master is really in the midst of his work on the earth, mother, do not be surprised if a good deal of criticism of an adverse and spiteful kind, should rise up about the life on this side. It is bound to come; the Sadducees of this generation have not lost their wily tongues. But don't heed it; keep quietly on with your work, and help anyone when you get the chance.

“The great doctrine of self-sacrifice is one of the most important and valuable truths that the world will be taught, and many people will strongly object to it, and some will endeavour to give the wrong explanation of it, which is still preached by some of the Eastern nations. I told you a little about it yesterday, mother, but I want to add some more to-day. Some teachers say that the highest point of self-sacrifice, or renunciation, as they call it, is negation of all desires, and thoughts, and affections. That isn't so at all, mother. The great Master Christ reached that point thousands of years ago, and He is simply crammed full of love, and affection, and joyous-heartedness, and full of interest in the affairs of your world. Why, mother, nothing makes Him happier than seeing little children happy, and watching the happiness of people who love each other with all their minds and spirit, as you and I and Jack do, and He is awfully pleased when some poor soul here in the sad places, at last escapes, and comes to us. Our Master is the great Example and Type for all of us, mother, and what He is not, is not for us. That is a bit obscure, mother, I'm afraid; it's hard to get through, but it really means that, as His wonderful development to the highest point we can imagine, has not made Him either oblivious or unconscious of emotions, neither shall we cease to feel them. Take hold of that, mother, it is an important point. Then again, some people teach that self-sacrifice means giving up every single pleasure and joy that the earth can give, and always being in a state of mental sackcloth and ashes. It doesn't, and the Master will say so. It means enjoying everything that is fine and lovely on the earth, as the great God meant them to be enjoyed, but all the while, holding them so lightly as to be ready to give them up at any moment, if the order should come. The Master first, our neighbour second, ourselves nowhere at all. That's it in a nutshell, mother; and with that end in view, the mighty work of building up and restoring the damage of all kinds that has been caused by this most horrible war, will be abundantly blessed and helped forward. Now I must go.

My love, mother. Tiny, rest now.”

NOVEMBER 18th

“You know, mother, some say that every word in the Christian Bible is inspired, or

originating in the Almighty God Himself, who poured it into the human writers on your plane, and so it follows that the whole of the Bible must be literally true. That's utterly wrong; a great deal of it is so low in spirituality, that it is an insult to the Almighty God to connect Him with it. I'm thinking now, mother, of many of the Old Testament stories which are still read in churches on your plane, and even told to children, without the proper explanation. Many of them picture the Great Ruler of all the worlds as a blood-thirsty, scheming, relentless tyrant? Can you make people realize that much of the want of faith on the earth is directly traceable to such a materialistic conception of God, and the way in which the same conception has been handed down generation after generation, without any notes or explanations as to the lessons those old stories were meant to teach, to a vast majority of people? Even now there exist people who will say and believe 'The Lord our God is a jealous God.' It's such an utterly unworthy idea, mother, and so futile, and utterly useless as a spiritual help to people on your plane. Well, all those worn-out ideas must go, they are just rubbish cumbering the ground, and must be cleared away to make room for the grand picture of limitless Love, boundless Power, and most just justice. That's what the Master wants the world to realize; no more horrible teaching of blood and sacrifice of beings (although dumb) to appease the wrath of a great Majestic Power, no more wasting time and spiritual energy in trying to force one's heart to believe what one's intelligence condemns. No faith could remain unaltered for all time on that basis; change must come, and more direct teaching is making for the restoration of the ideal which has sunk into forgetfulness, chiefly through the institution of that horrible doctrine of redemption by blood. Now I must go, mother; I shall give you a longer message to-morrow.

My love. Tiny, rest now."

NOVEMBER 19th

"We know that there are many people on the earth who are much wanting to see our great Master with their ordinary eyes. Tell them please, mother, that many will see Him in that way, but not everyone will know Him. No one need expect to find Him in the ordinary way in the market place, or the fashionable church. He will be there, of course, but those who are looking for Him with love and longing in their hearts must look in quieter places. This is just a short word for those special people. The Master will make a great point of teaching the children on your Plane in various ways. You will notice that already in some schools, the teaching of the truth of the Christian Faith and the reality of the spirit world, is much more intelligent and broadminded, than was the case some years ago. I'm speaking now more particularly of the big public schools. Slowly but surely the fact is being brought home to those in authority, that unless they do realize the vital necessity for a change of procedure, the Christian Church will cease to exist. It was in a desperate condition before the War, mother, and the higher spirits were terribly distressed, but could not do very much to help, and so the War came. That brought the world up sharp against the

question 'Why,' and 'Where are they?' They! The gallant sons of gallant men and women of all countries, giving up everything, enduring everything for what they knew deep down in their hearts was the cause of righteousness. The higher spirits have told us how awfully glad they were at the way the world on the whole, responded to the challenge flung down by Germany. They knew she was saved in this cycle of her evolution, and that the fate which overtook Poseidonis \* and threatened her was averted. But only just, mother, it hung in the balance, and, what decided it? Well, just the fact of England coming in and fighting for a scrap of paper! That really did it, and made the Black Forces so infinitely more enraged, and determined to worst us if they could, on your plane. They had been defeated here, so they had to come lower down and work on the earth through the passions of men. All that happens on the earth is a shadow of events here. I've told you that before, mother, but it won't hurt by repetition. That's another point which will make the struggle on your plane more intelligent when it is fully understood.

\* For an account of Poseidonis, the last remaining island of the continent of Atlantis, and of its destruction by terrific volcanic eruptions, the reader is referred to the "Critias" and "Timaeus" in the Dialogues of Plato. It would seem, from Plato's account, that this final destruction took place in about 9,600 B.C. Plato names the island "Poseidonis." The following is a quotation from Le Plongeon's translation of the Troano, MS. written by the Mayas of Yucatan, and now to be seen in the British Museum. Archeologists have estimated that this manuscript is about 3,500 years old.

"In the year 6 Kan, on the 11th Muluc in the month Zac, there occurred terrible earthquakes, which continued without interruption until the 13th Chuen. The country of the hills of mud, the land of Mu was sacrificed: being twice upheaved it suddenly disappeared during the night, the basin being continually shaken by volcanic forces. At last the surface gave way and ten countries were torn asunder and scattered. Unable to stand the force of the convulsions, they sank with their 64,000,000 of inhabitants 8,060 years before the writing of this book."

Accepting the archaeologists' estimate of the age of the Troano MS., this would place the date of the sinking of Poseidonis at about 9,650 B.C. The reader will find much other interesting evidence on this subject in Ignatius Donnelly's "Atlantis." - JESSIE PLATTS, June 19th, 1921.

NOVEMBER 21st

"Tell people please, mother, that divine Omnipotence is the attribute of the Almighty God, which is most difficult for them to understand, because apparently there are times when His Omnipotence seems a mistake and not a truth. Well, that's only because of the limited knowledge of people on the earth; they must accept the fact that it is true, and not bother about the seeming contradiction until they are better prepared to receive instruction. If the whole real explanation were given to them now, because there is more behind it than the scheme of evolution for man by his

own free-will, they could not appreciate it, and they would only feel still foggier about it, and wouldn't be really helped. There are forces working now, all unknown to the majority, but they have to be kept back because the world is not ready for the knowledge."

NOVEMBER 22nd

"Tell all faithful workers for the great Master Christ, that His Work for the world 2,000 years ago, is being repeated now. Not in exactly the same way, because the world is 2,000 years older, and man's evolution advanced accordingly. It is ready now for much of the teaching that could not be given to it then. My Master and yours (this is Hilarion \* speaking, mother) will above all the rest teach the nearness and reality of spirit life. The world is in much more need of that teaching than any dogma or doctrine evolved by the priesthood."

\* I had never heard of the Master Hilarion, before my son named him in these messages. I have subsequently both heard a great deal about him from others and read of him in books. - JESSIE PLATTS, June 19th, 1921.

"It is a vital truth, mother, and I am pressing it home to you today. We are with you in the world just as we were before, only you cannot see us. We take our interest in life on your plane as before, especially in those things which interested us while we were in the physical body. We know something of the struggles and disappointments of the earth souls, and much of the happiness too; connected with this is our love and remembrance for the friends we have loved here. It is all one world actually and really, mother, and very much alike in some things, though widely different in others. There are schools of all kinds here, there are places of worship, there are glorious rivers and gardens, and mountains and lakes; there is music, and light, and laughter, there is love unspeakable. There is again the dark side of the picture. There is sorrowing, and suffering, and woe, but behind all the sadness, again, is love unspeakable, and the final conquering of all that makes the sorrow and the anguish, and peace and joy remain for every single soul. But there is this to say too. It cannot be earned for the soul, but by the soul. No soul, human or divine, can bear the burden for the other, each must carry his own pack, and fight his way to the very, very end. No light task, well-nigh impossible sometimes, but there is much help if the soul will ask for it. Always his own guide is with him to warn and advise, always will the great Master Christ hear at once the very faintest cry for help. The help comes in all sorts of different ways, mother, and very often through a human instrument. Help from the Master does not always mean a chap feeling better and comfortable inside, when he has been perhaps giving way to a certain temptation and been sorry for it afterwards, but sometimes he is brought into touch with another soul who can and does, give him the very help he wants. Sometimes he does not know it, sometimes the other soul, if he is advanced spiritually, sees at once that this is a soul who wants help, and understands that he has been brought into touch with him of set purpose, through influence from this side. There is no haphazard

method, mother, of giving help; it's all done in order, and with a very definite plan behind it. So much of what people describe as 'such a curious coincidence' is really an admission of help from us, but the majority don't know it, at present, and wouldn't own it if they did. The whole ruling of your world, mother, is done through different spiritual agents, who have charge of different groups and forms of activity, and who have under their special care the units comprising them. I have known all this for some time, but have not been allowed to tell you as you were not ready to receive it. These agents, as they might be called, are known as Masters here, mother, and I will try to tell you a little about them. They are very mighty spirits, most glorious to look at, who had attained a very high level of development indeed, but of their own free will gave up their right to enter the highest heaven and came back to the earth to help the people on it. They were all men once, not spirits from other planets, and know the struggle of the upward path. Many of them are working in their bodies on the earth now, helping to prepare the way for the coming of the Master Christ, and one of them is that very devoted disciple, Jesus of Nazareth.

"We were all so pleased when we were told that you had been put under the charge of the Master Hilarion; he is most wonderfully kind, mother, and will help you so much. Perhaps he will come sometimes himself, and give you a message direct. Now I must go.

My love, mother, Tiny, rest now."

NOVEMBER 23rd

"Will you please tell people, mother, that much of the wrongdoing on the earth is brought about by many evil influences, not necessarily spiritual temptations alone, but material ills which are to some extent controlled by evil forces in the world. There is a great deal of preventive and remedial wrong-doing in the world, which could be avoided quite easily in very many cases, by an amelioration of the conditions of existence. So much of the so-called vice comes from underpaid labour, and miserable housing. This is especially the case with women on your plane, and in view of the fact that in the coming period of progress on the earth, women are appointed to take a very much higher standing, it is important that their present position should be very considerably changed. What is at the bottom of so much of the evil among women, and the appalling loss of child life, is the iniquitous wage that is paid to so many female workers, the cruelly long hours and deadly dull monotony of their lives. My message to-day is to tell you, mother, that woman's work should be done by woman, and man's work by man. The care of the child is the first duty of every mother on the earth. It ought not to be allowed that mothers of young children should be forced by the struggle for physical life, to be wageearners either out of or in the home, and be obliged either to grossly neglect their children, or to leave them in the care of many people who just take the small sum the mother can afford to pay, and neglect the helpless infants in their charge. The evolution of your world is progressing very rapidly now, mother, and the more enlightened female egos are

realizing what a tremendous duty they owe to their less fortunate sisters. Besides, the spiritual life is so much less able to develop, when the only end and aim in life is the miserable weekly pittance, hardly enough to keep the body alive at all; the sick fear of losing the job, the terror of rent day, and all these little details of the life of thousands on the earth, especially in the great cities, which make earth life so hideous, and not the beautiful, joyous thing, the great God meant it to be. The Master Christ, mother, has a particularly great love for mothers and their children, and these words come from Him. Make the happier mothers understand the misery and the daily desperate struggle for existence, for themselves and their children, of the less fortunate ones. Tell them that they can help to raise them to the higher level which they themselves have reached. The suffering of one human mother battling against the great forces of poverty, and disease, are weighed up against those who could have helped, and passed by on the other side. Let those more fortunate mothers in this earth life remember, that the lowest mother in the most awful London slum, is still a spiritual being, working out her evolution, as she has earned her present by her past. Let those happier egos think of the love and many blessings that surround their own children, and let them remember that, as much has been given to them, much will be required of them; not necessarily in money or public service, that is not possible for all, but in love and sympathy and perfect understanding of their own duty in the matter, never losing sight of the fact that progress is the description applied to every mother on the earth, be she living in slum or palace. No matter that what she is enduring now is the result of her own actions, she must be helped forward. My message to-day, mother, is very specially to mothers, because a mother is so strongly linked to her children while on the earth, so much more than the father. It is a survival of the days of the very, very long ago, when the mother fought for food for the children, and watched over and protected them. The father roamed about the earth as he liked, and was only an occasional visitor. The link between the mother and the children, when it is the golden link of the very strongest love, nothing can ever break. No suffering, no sorrow, no length of separation. Nothing can come between the mother and the child then, and of course it is the same with the souls who have been husband and wife in earth life, when that golden fetter is there. Nothing will part them, though the journey may be very, very long. Tell people this, mother, the immortal undying link between souls who love each other with the same pure, real, and lasting love, as my Master loves mankind.

NOVEMBER 24th

“Will you please tell people, mother, that purity of living” (“action?”) “must be accompanied by purity of thought. Yes, that’s a better word, mother, and what I really meant to say. It isn’t enough for a soul to refrain from sinful words, and actions, and yet feel horribly wicked inside. Of course it’s worse in a way when thoughts are converted into deeds, but, do you know, mother, wicked murderous thoughts converted into deeds, are most terribly far reaching in their consequences. A thought of murder can reach another soul, and actually make him kill another

man's body. This isn't nonsense, mother, it's perfectly true, and the evil can be done without either of the agents having the slightest knowledge of each other. And that sinful act is not singular, other evil consequences follow the unspoken evil thought. People in the world haven't the faintest notion yet of the tremendous power of thought; they would be overwhelmed if they could see half what we do, of the awful wickedness and suffering, that comes from evil thoughts of the souls, who think they are moral, good-living people. And of course for those who are really degraded, the evil is multiplied. When a soul feels anything burning and bursting within him of the nature of malice, or hatred, or jealousy, or any of the evil passions, he should put the thought away from him at once - if he's not strong enough for that immediately, he should ask for help for his unkindness at the end of the day, and express his sorrow for allowing himself to be led away into thinking evil of another person. That goes a long way to counteract the influence of the unspoken word, but it is much more efficacious if it is done immediately. The Master knows how easy it is to feel annoyed, and though it may not be so difficult to check the unkind word, it is most tremendously difficult to check the unkind thought. Tell them what a wondrous influence for good is the unspoken thought; a thought of love for persons known, or unknown, spreads a sort of glowing light all round the neighbourhood of the soul who is thinking kindly and charitably, and that light spreads round, getting ever bigger and bigger, and covering all with its wonderful rays. Kind thoughts of men and women help them to be kind, although they do not know it. Think kindly, always refrain from judgment, and speak helpful words when the opportunity offers, but never push in with your own faith and assurance unless you see the opening.

NOVEMBER 26th

"Nothing can be done to teach people the way up to God unless they wish to be taught. It is impossible to make people progress, they must have the desire first, and then the knowledge can be given them. My Master wants it known, mother, that even people who don't really care anything about the other life, or the evolution of the world, but who are eager to listen to anything new out of pure curiosity, are more ready for teaching than those who either utterly deny the need for any further enlightenment, or are too apathetic to mind one way or the other. There is a chance of capturing the attention of the first named, and making a permanent impression - the others must be left alone. I do not include those really thinking people who say that the old faith, once delivered, must be the only really stable basis of belief, and who are fair-minded in discussion, and who will admit the possibility of a different interpretation of statements in the Christian Bible, but they say it is not for them. Well, they are honest, and most of them have reached the highest that is possible to them in this earth life. Where my messages may be treated as offensive, is among those congregations who do not want to be upset in their convictions, because it annoys them, and makes them feel so uncomfortable. There are ever so many like that in the earth now, hating any new idea, because they have to think. They don't want to think, they much prefer to have it done for them, and no bother to

themselves. Well, those are the people to whom the new ideas of the Master Christ, the proximity of the spirit world, and the conditions of life there, would be most distasteful, simply because of their own mental sloth. There is much to be said for the scoffers on your plane, you know, mother, because a good many of them do use their wits, although they get themselves all tangled and twisted up in the doing!

“The rest of my message is about something quite different, although it links up with the subject as a whole. It is this:

“Much harm is done by very good people insisting on an observance of a day of humiliation, or... (you’ve lost power for a moment. Don’t guess what I’m going to say, mother, be quite passive). My message is just this. I’ll put it differently. Some people on the earth have days set apart for mourning over the loss, as they call it, of their friends on earth, That practice is fatal to their own spiritual advancement, and disastrous to the happiness of those very friends whom they profess to love so much. Will you please let this appear in the book, mother? I’ve come across several men here lately, who have been over some time, and they, like me, would give anything if only their people would leave off grieving for them in that particular harrowing way. You see, the thoughts of the grieving friend reach the souls here, and sorrow of that kind, you know, mother, is thick, black sorrow, and has an awful effect here. No gleam of hope or knowledge in it, just blind earthly hunger for the bodily presence of those who used to be inmates of the home, and who still are, if only they would believe it. The path to the stature of the fulness of the Christ, in other words the achieving of perfect humanity, has to be trodden alone, and with all earthly links so lightly forged that a thought can break them. Tell people this. One of the links is human affection. That does not mean, as I have told before, that love of kindred is to be lightly esteemed. It means that love on your earth must have for its copy the love here, boundless and free, and utterly unselfish. Now I must go, mother.

My love. Tiny, rest now.”

NOVEMBER 27th

“Among many very interesting things in your life here is the way in which we travel through space. I’ve told you a little about it before, but not very much. Do you know, it’s very much like the fairy story when you stood on a magic carpet, and wished yourself at a place, and behold, you were there! I come to you in less than an instant when you are ready to write. When I first came over here I found travelling through space very difficult, and I was always getting stuck on my journeys! It was because I had not learnt to concentrate properly, and used to forget where I was going, and so naturally I stopped. Sometimes it would be on the roof of a house, or the top of a tree. It would have made you laugh if you could have seen me; I used to simply roar at my mistakes! That way of travelling is only necessary when we move through space; we use our legs in the ordinary way when we walk about our home here. It is most awfully jolly to be able to visit distant places whenever you want to. At first I was not allowed to go alone, for many reasons, but I am advanced enough now. I

very often come to Cambridge, mother, and walk along the same old streets, and sometimes I go to Horsham, but we do not travel very much just now, because we have so much work to do. There is still an enormous amount of evil rampant on the earth and will be for some time to come. There may very likely be very serious trouble with Germany in spite of the armistice. There is no change of heart yet in that misguided nation, and the Allied Powers will have to be very watchful indeed, and keenly on the look-out for trickery and treachery. Much influence is being poured on them - the Allies - from this side, and they will want very much more before the peace is signed.

“My Master wants me to tell you, mother, that nothing is ever hurriedly done in working out the purpose of the Almighty God on the earth. Time does not exist in the sight of God; that’s an earth limitation, and must be borne with, patiently. Time ceases when the soul leaves the material world, or rather the grosser kind of material world, because it is material in my home here, only of a finer kind, and it has to learn that there is no such thing; it is all present, all eternity, and there is no need for the rush and turmoil of the life on the earth. The only thing in which we might perhaps say that there was a conception of time is, when we have special bits of work to do, and cannot stay long with friends on the earth. Haven’t I often told you, mother, that I must go as there is a piece of work waiting for me, or that I’m going to France to-night?”

(“Yes.”)

“Well, that’s the nearest approach to conditions of time here, and that’s why we make mistakes in sending messages through, when dates and facts have to be dealt with. No doubt we shall be able to understand better later on, but at present, time, as you reckon it, is impossible with us.

“Well, what I was really talking about, was the leisurely way in which great conditions are evolved and carried out on the earth. No work is ever done by the Most High God in a slipshod or slovenly manner, as it is in the growth of mountains and forests, so it is with work connected with humanity; but always the end is sure, nothing ever fails of the purpose of God, not even man’s perversity and crankiness. He may defy justice, and law, and affection, and loyalty, and even the Almighty God Himself, but in the end he will be brought to acknowledge his own most blinded spirit, and the clear-eyed wisdom of the Supreme Being. Nothing can destroy the Master’s coming, mother, it has been arranged for a very long time ago, you know, and over here, those of us who have made sufficient progress are becoming more clairvoyant and allowed to read a little of what you call the past (and so do most egos) as well as the future, and we have been allowed to see for ourselves how events on your earth have gradually led up to the absolute necessity for the coming of the great Master Christ once more, on the earth.

“My Master Hilarion is here, mother, and will give a message direct”: “My message is this. Be watchful, write only for the son, pray without ceasing, Much will be required

of you, and much will be given you. Rest now, and wait for my further help. Hilarion has spoken.”

(“Tiny darling, it was really Hilarion, wasn’t it?”)

“Yes, mother, my Master Hilarion really came. Now I must go. Tiny, rest now.”

NOVEMBER 29th

“When the world as a whole has come to realize the profound meaning underlying the mere waste of human life in this most awful war, it will have advanced many a stage on its evolution. The waste does not exist in reality; it is all part of the uplifting of the standard of righteousness and high living, on the earth. All the sorrow, all the suffering, and the pain, all the anguish of the women, all the separation, are just stones in the building, so to speak; there is room for all. The glad surrender of all that life promised, the joyful rush to the call of duty, the steadfastness in the face of danger, the utter contempt of death and disregard of self, both on the part of women as well as men, these all go to the building of the character of thousands of souls on the earth, and through them to the forwarding of the earth’s upward trend. Not waste, mother, glorious use by the Almighty God of material, much of which might have been considered on the earth as fit for nothing, but to cast away. Many, many souls have earned at one jump what has taken thousands and thousands of years for others to reach. Suffering in itself is a bad thing, but above itself, it is service of the highest order. Don’t be feeling mystified, mother.”

(“All right, darling, I think I can follow you.”)

“Well then, I can go on. People have got the idea that sin and suffering very often go together. That is true, but not always. A soul that has reached a very high stage of development in earth life, may be called upon to suffer terribly. It is all discipline in that case, the last test for the soul while in the physical body. Will you press that point, mother, please. Suffering is a punishment for sin, or, as the right way to express it, consequence of action on the part of the soul himself, very often, but occasionally the suffering is permitted for the final refining of the soul. Not many souls may be trained in that way, but all must suffer in some form or other; there is no hardship in it, it is just and right, and suffering of any kind can be much more easily borne, when it is universally believed that one has deserved it by his own acts. The sufferings of this war, however, are just a little different in origin, and also in extent. It was not possible to separate the individual from the nation. I’m speaking now of all the nations combatant or otherwise; all were guilty in varying degrees, all have had to suffer collectively. Although the authors of the suffering at the last were a handful of individuals, the causes that made the War necessary and unavoidable, existed in the years that are long past. For many and many a day the world as a whole, had been gradually losing sight of the spiritual life altogether, growing more and more material, less and less inclined to believe in the Almighty God or the Master Christ. So it had to be pulled up sharp, because otherwise it would have

meant again utter annihilation. So much had been given to the earth in the way of progress of all kinds, so many wonderful discoveries in science, so much in medicine, because all these things come from our side, men on the earth do not originate them. But many of those wonderful discoveries were turned to the basest usages, and used to destroy the earthly bodies of thousands of human beings, in the cruellest possible way. I speak now more particularly of the Germans, that nation whom I have described to you before as having willingly allowed themselves to be dominated by the powers of evil. So you see, mother, much that was meant to be a help to mankind, turned out to be the reverse, not through any fault on one side, but through the blindness, and perversity, and low standard of morality, of the egos on the earth. Never speak of the waste of sacrifice, mother, it's a wrong term altogether. My message means much more than I can get through to you this morning, as I know you are thinking of so many innocent persons who were sacrificed, and did not make the surrender themselves; but there again you come back to the truth of previous existences, and also the unalterable fact, hard though it may sound in the ears of some people on the earth, that physical death counts for so very little on this side. All that we are chiefly concerned about is the progress and ultimate perfection of the individual soul. Try to remember that, mother, it will help in getting a right perspective of the facts of life and death in the world. To us, life on your plane is such a poor shadowy thing, that we rejoice we are no longer living there in the old way. This isn't meant unkindly, mother, it's only to try to help you along a bit, and make you understand more and more the reality of life here and the shadowy life on the earth. Much remains to be told to you, mother, but we may not press too much on you at once."

NOVEMBER 30th

"Do not let people imagine that duty alone is sufficient password for the advance in spirit life. Nothing done in duty's name with a grudging manner is real duty done as service to God. There is an impression among people, mother, that Duty, spelt with a capital letter, please, should be a very much checked and thwarted idea of the pleasures of the life on earth. Some of those souls consider it wrong to take any enjoyment out of life here at all; they call this beautiful earth world a vale of tears, and themselves, miserable sinners. All this while they are just and upright people, many of them, but they have got hold of an utterly false impression of what duty really is. Shall I try to explain it, mother, as we learn it here? Well, Duty is twofold. First, Duty towards the Master Christ, and through Him to the Almighty God, and next, Duty to ourselves, which means our neighbour as well. To the first we are told belong all the supreme spiritual attributes, especially the fervent striving after the ideal life, the pattern of which was given us in the West by our great Master Christ, 2,000 years ago. And to the second, the control of our lower nature, so that we can do nothing hurtful to ourselves, or to other people. Duty is really an obligation, you know, mother, something we owe to someone else. I think that makes it clearer. But the mistake that is so often made, is making it a disagreeable kind of job, when it

should really be the very keenest pleasure and happiness to us. And the reason is this. Underneath, deep down in their hearts, those good, but very trying people, are making their duty a burden, by resenting the necessity for it, and that means selfishness. There you have it, mother, the stumbling-block to all progress, material or spiritual, love of self steps in and makes a bogey of what should be sheer delight. Service given grudgingly, kindness done grudgingly, help offered grudgingly, is all hateful, and more than degrading to the unfortunate recipient. The good deed done with the unkind thought behind it, loses all its value, like water poured out on to the sand.

It does more than that: it produces heart-burnings, and much friction that could have been avoided, and Duty's beautiful face is marred, and disfigured by the bilious outlook on life, held by that particular soul. Duty is self-sacrifice, and self-sacrifice is love, and love is Christ, and Christ is the Manifestation of God. So you see, mother, what a heavenly thing Duty really is; get people to look upon it in that way, and then all the tiresomeness of it, and the strain and the bondage, will fade, and nothing be left but the glad consciousness of some little thing done, for the honour of the Master. Do not let people think that a long face and rigid abstinence from all the delights of physical existence, mean a specially advanced spiritual soul; they don't. It means that particular soul is puffed up with spiritual pride, and becomes soured and embittered in consequence. The beautiful things of life on the earth are meant to be enjoyed; to despise or condemn them, is insulting the great Author of all life, here, and on our side. Cheerfulness and laughter are mighty helps to other human beings; gloomy looks and speech, correspondingly act as hindrances.

DECEMBER 1 st

"You know, mother, even for me, although I have been over here some time now, it is sometimes a little difficult to realize that I am what you call dead, not you personally, but the bulk of people on the earth, because I am so tremendously alive, and working and enjoying my life here so much. Mother, it is the grandest, jolliest life you can possibly imagine. All love and kindness from my friends, never an idle wasted minute, never a tired feeling; never anything but the fullest, freest powers of activity here, and on your plane. Well, it does seem sometimes that my wonderful life here is much more than I deserve. All my friends are so good to me, and the older ones have helped me so much; and then, you know, mother, I am allowed to see the Master Christ very often now, and sometimes I have actually been permitted to take a message to Him, when He has left our part of the spirit world and gone to a loftier plane. My teacher Bruno has told me that I shall be changing my plane soon, mother, but it won't make any difference to the messages, I am still to be allowed to talk to you. I am so glad about that, as I thought I might not have been given the permission, so we shall still be able to go on working together.

"Be ready to write whenever you are wanted, mother, but only for me. You are to be trained now in the path of obedience, mother, and you'll find it jolly hard. Because

we know here that you very much miss the messages that were coming through to you from other people, and you may be called upon any day to write for someone else, but you are never to do it unless the Master Hilarion gives you permission. It will be very, very hard for you, mother, and you'll be very much tempted to disobey, but you must not at any price. This message is to be included in the book, because it is needed to shew the public that all mediums of the high spiritual order to which you belong, are most carefully guarded, and protected, and trained for their work, by the great ones from this side. It is not possible to protect all mediums, as some of them are only psychic, and not spiritual at all, and that is the reason why so many of them ruin their health, and become valueless, both as regards their powers, and what is transmitted through to them. Mediums of coarse fibre, and low mental calibre, are very much influenced by entities from the astral plane, who are often most undesirable acquaintances, if nothing more than that, and so the whole subject of spirit communication becomes degraded, and reduced to a very low level indeed. My Master Hilarion wants this understood, and tells me to make you understand that mediums of your type are always protected, because their own spiritual perceptions are firm enough to meet the help from this side, so to speak, half-way. Do you understand, mother?"

("Yes, darling.")

"Well, that's all right then. This is an important message, mother, as it is much desired by the great ones over here, that the word medium should no longer be uttered with contempt, and sneering laughter.

"Now I must go; but, mother, don't forget the Master Hilarion's words to you, absolute obedience in this matter of writing.

My love. Tiny, rest now."

DECEMBER 2nd

"The root of a nation's prosperity lies in its attitude towards the Almighty God. That has also been so right back from the very commencement of time on your plane, because although our Master Christ did not come to the earth as a manifestation of God till very late in its history, yet there was always the conception of a Supreme Ruler, in whatever form the nations of the earth conceived it. Some of their ideas were very, very lofty, far higher than any we have now; sublime and beautiful teaching was the daily food of the people, and so long as they listened and obeyed, and remained true to their highest instincts, so long did that nation prosper, and develop in the right way. But directly the lower nature of the people reasserted itself, things changed. Gradually the poison spread and affected all classes and conditions; the old simple way of living was gone, men jostled each other, and fought each other, in the rush for place and power, and God was crowded out of their lives. Many of their rulers, good and just men, saw the danger, and strove with all their might to avert it, but it was no use, till the well-advanced egos gradually withdrew from that

nation, and when that happened its downfall was sure and only a matter of time. It was dryrot, spiritual dry-rot, that destroyed each nation of the past in turn, up to this present day. The lessons of the past are meant for our admonition, mother, and the Master Christ wishes me to tell you that it is a most necessary message for the people of the Anglo-Saxon race to-day. They have just come through a most momentous epoch in their history; they are just entering upon another. After the War - the Peace. And the second is a much weightier matter than the first. All the teaching of the past, as it has come down to this generation, is for the leaders of the State to mark well, and consider. When I speak of a nation forgetting God, I do not mean so much the neglect of church-going; that, by itself, is a very small account, because many of the most moral and high-principled of the people on the earth, perhaps never enter a church. But it is in the spirit of the old Egyptians, who used to say, 'Let us eat and drink, for to-morrow we die,' and it all leads up to this, the denial of the spirit life. The mystery of life on this side, is a blank wall to them; they do not care to scale it themselves; they condemn others for trying. Denial of the spirit life goes hand in hand with denial of God. Naturally and logically it must. What possible Meaning is there in belief in a Supreme Ruler, if life on your world just begins, and ends, with your physical birth and death? My Master wants me to say a good deal more to you, mother, if you are not too tired?

("No.")

"All right. Well, that's true what I said just now, mother, isn't it? How can this life be the end and beginning of everything, if there is a Mighty Wonderful Ruler over all the worlds? As soon as men begin to realise, and search, and find out for themselves, the absolute unanswerable facts of life apart from the physical body, then will come the dawn of the new age upon the earth, and the beginning of the restoration, and reconstruction, of much that was once well known, but lost through decay of spirituality. Men cannot believe in the existence of God, and deny the reality of spirit life - it is impossible. What men on your earth have to set themselves to do, mother, is to make that existence part of their own daily material life, not in any foolish bogey kind of way, but quite naturally and simply, accepting it as part of the plan of the progress and evolution (or redemption, as some people call it) of the world. When that is done, just see what an enormous impetus it will give to everyone to put forth all their strength for self improvement! And what a factor it will be in the peace of the world! Not fatalism, mother, but a clear, sensible acceptance of the truth that your world is a training-school for this, governed by certain laws from this side, having set over it certain powers and personalities, who take charge of different sections and communities of it, working through human agents, certainly, but always with their own mighty force - as the origin, and bearing to the great Ruler of all, the reports of the progress of all nations, and kindreds, and tongues. Now, mother, I must go, but this is really a most important message, and I have much more to tell you another time. My love, mother. Tiny, rest now."

DECEMBER 3rd

“Communication between the planes has been pronounced a certainty, but people are still bothering themselves as to whether those who communicate are really the people they say they are. Well, proof can only come slowly, and every precaution should be taken by investigators, to insure absolute honesty and singleness of purpose on the part of any medium employed, whether professional or otherwise. Many of the present-day mediums are fraudulent, though they mean to be honest. Their powers are undoubted, but they try them too much in their efforts to make more money, and then, when they find the power failing, they invent communications, and so destroy the spirituality of the subject. The reason is very often because they are poor people, and make their living by their psychic powers. We feel over here that much could be done to safeguard the interest of the subject, and free it from much of the undeserved stigma attached to it, if all mediums could be formed into a kind of society, or club, and supported by that society, so that no question of money-making could come into it. Such a plan would exclude all charlatans and impostors, as only mediums registered at that club, would be allowed to practise their profession. All the others would simply be mediumistic quacks, and the public would only have itself to blame if ill-results attended any intercourse with them. Some such plan as that, we think, would greatly help the subject of intercourse between the planes. Because, mother, the door has been opened, and it is going to be opened wider and wider still. Research work has been going on patiently and tirelessly for many years, and there is so much accumulated proof, that it is impossible for research to cease. Neither is it intended that it should. Many of the ablest scientific men on the earth, are being powerfully influenced from this side, so are some of the more advanced doctors and theologians. Many of the humbler workers on the earth are receiving instruction, too, although unknown to them. You know, mother, so much of the knowledge that is coming through now, has all been known on the earth before, only it fell into disrepute through being mixed up with so much that was wicked and evil. But the time is come for the good to be sifted from the bad, and the world shall know that all this lovely spiritual life here, is part and lot with your material life in the world. Just as much as the pleasures and joys of life are part of the training of the body in the earth, so are all spiritual matters part of the training too. Not to be taken up on Sunday morning and put down on Sunday night, but to be kept in mind all the days of the week.

“Don't let people think that I mean that they are to confine themselves to dwelling on spiritual things and neglect the material things. I don't; they would be doing much harm to themselves and to others, if they took that line. Both must go together, and both are necessary. Certain lessons can only be learnt by the soul while hampered by a physical body, and till those lessons are learned, the physical body is a most important part of the construction of the individual. Part of the training may be held as a kind of discipline for the mind of the ego, and part as reward or punishment, for actions committed long ago and long forgotten.

“Many mediums, mother, have been employed much in the past; many of them will be employed much in the future. We can see that in time mediums will hold much the same place in the world as did the priestesses of old, or the vestal virgins. No more will they be shunned, and mobbed, and derided, no more will the law commit them to prison for deceiving the public, but they will be recognised as a definite body of people with definite psychic gifts, which are to be employed in maintaining a pure spiritual intercourse between our side of the veil, and yours. Much remains to be told you, mother, about the ways of communication, and I can tell you a little more now, but it is most awfully difficult for me to get it through, so just help me all you can, mother, by lifting yourself up to me, as it were.”

“I will try.”)

“All right. It all depends on the vibrations of the receiver and the communicator, they must be in tune, so to speak; that is to say, I am able to speak to you, and send all these messages through you, because we both are tuned to the same key, and also because of the intense sympathy between us, but that’s really the same thing.

“And then, you know, there is the question of permission. All intercourse is controlled by the Master Christ. No authentic message ever comes unsanctioned by Him. Impersonation may, and does, occur, because there are always plenty of undeveloped and mischievous entities crowding round, and getting in the way. What I have said about communication applies to both sorts, the evil and the good. According to the medium’s standard and development, so will the communications be, and there you will see how much very real danger attends people who pursue this subject from low and unworthy motives. Never go to a public seance, mother; there are many people who do, but keep away from them.

“My Master Hilarion will speak to you now, and I’ll wait a minute.”

“Hilarion is here. My message to you to-night is a very short one. Be sure you write for no one but the son. I have much work for you later on. This is my word; be sure of my protection. Have no fear for the future. Hilarion has spoken.”

“Still here, Tiny?”)

“Yes, mother, I waited to say good-night till the Great One had gone.

My love, mother. Tiny, rest now.”

DECEMBER 4th

“When my Master Christ came on the earth before as a teacher, one of the things that surprised the people of that time so much, was His command to love those who were their enemies. That was an awfully hard nut for the Jews of that time, who had been brought up for generations in the faith of ‘an eye for an eye,’ etc., but that teaching of the Master’s made the great difference in all that had been taught before His time. That, and the teaching that the Great God of all cared for every soul on the earth equally, and not one particular nation only. Well, mother, that order to love

one's enemies is very hard to obey at the present time. You'll guess to what I'm referring."

("To the Germans?")

"Yes, that's it. Well, we over here see so plainly all the awful wrong that has been done, all the suffering, the effects of which will last for generations, and we sympathise and agree with the wish of the people, that justice should be done to the authors of it. At the same time we do wish people on the earth to remember, that nothing which can be done to that handful of men who projected this awful war on the world, by human agents, can be compared with the fate which awaits them here, and which they have earned for themselves. We do not mean to mix ourselves with the courses which may commend themselves to the rulers of the nations of the earth in respect to the punishment to be meted out to those offenders of the German and Austrian nations, but we are concerned in one feature of the situation, and it is this: We are most anxious that the gallant self-sacrifice of thousands of men and women who gladly gave their best and dearest for the cause of righteousness, should keep their sacrifice unsullied by any thought of revenge or punishment, for the suffering and sorrow, that sacrifice entailed. To do that would be to blur and cloud the shield of high hope, and duty bravely done. Keep that in mind, Will you, mother, because it refers much more to the English and American nations, than the European countries. My message is not meant as a condonation of the iniquities committed by the German people, but as a plea for still further sacrifice on the part of those who have given their all, and lost it. If justice is to be done according to the dictates of the wisest of the earthly rulers, and for the furtherance of peace on the earth, let it be done without any word from men and women who will never behold the young son, or the father again in the physical body. We are asking a very great deal from the people on the earth; many will vehemently oppose it, on the plea that with wrong there must be justice. Quite so. We are not questioning that for a moment; we are only urging on humanity the higher ideal, and, after all, is it a new teaching? Is it not 2,000 years old? 'Father, forgive them.' As the great disciple Jesus could reach that height, so may men on the earth to-day. Not many will - it's a very big thing to ask, but do try to put the point before them, mother. There is no thought of revenge or even punishment, in the minds of those of us who fell by German weapons, at least not in my part of the spirit world. We know that everything is working out to a great and mighty end, although the means employed seem so terrible to men on the earth. We know you will understand, mother, because you've been through it all before; that very ancient ego of yours has known the same sorrow and suffering ever so many times before, and that's why there is no feeling of resentment in your heart because I was killed."

("Well, darling, I don't feel I can ever speak to a German again!")

"No, mother, but that's a very different thing to voting for the death of those who caused mine, and millions of others, isn't it? Anyway, there's the ideal; get as many

people to live up to it as you can.

“My Master wants me to say, too, mother, that each person who tries honestly to put away from him all feelings of hate, and desire of personal punishment, is one more worker gained for the cause of peace among the nations. Do not let this message be taken to mean that Germany should go scot free. She must be made powerless to do harm - for all time; I am only speaking of personal punishment. When you come over here tonight, mother, I'll tell you more about it; and Bruno wants to talk to you, too. The attitude of people on the earth now, regarding this particular point is of the utmost importance for the future. If it is decided that justice must be done according to the Jewish formula I mentioned before, then let the judges be quite sure that no feeling of personal enmity shall bias them, and that, should the utmost rigour be found necessary, let it be put on record, that, only in that way could the peace and stability of the future generations be secured.

“Now there is one other thing I want to tell you, mother, and this is a personal touch for you. I don't want you to miss me so much if you can help it, because it is rather weakening your physical body. Of course, I know you really believe I'm alive - I'm not such an ass as not to know that; but I want you to take much more pleasure in life. Don't mind about my not being able to rush in, and bound up the stairs, like I used to do (although I do come very often), and don't worry because you can't give me a present at Christmas! I know that's in your mind, mother! You're not to be so silly, because you've really got me ever so much more certainly than you ever had before, you know.”

“I can't help missing you, dear old man, but I'll buck up a bit more, if I can.”

“No, mother, I know you can't, but I do want you to make yourself get more enjoyment out of earthly life. I shall know, and be awfully pleased, and shall share it all. Besides, it's your duty, mother; don't shirk it at this end, you've not done that before, so be a brave woman, and let my passing help you more, by living as bright and happy, a life as you can. If only you could remember when you come over and see how happy I am! But you will soon, and that will make all the difference to you. Now I must go.

My love. Tiny, rest now.”

DECEMBER 5th

“All that tends to strengthen the faith of the Master's servants is to the good, so do not judge harshly or critically when people still say their prayers to Jesus as the Master, although he was really only the servant. Nothing that helps forward the soul is counted as wrong, because, after all, Jesus the disciple is a very great spirit indeed now, and one of the Great Masters working on the earth, but we want people, in praying to Him, to try to remember that He is a servant of the Most High God as they are, and not the great God Himself. One of the objects of the Master Jesus' work on the earth is to clear up that mystery, and to forbid the worship of Him as worship

to the Almighty Ruler. It is terribly painful to Him in His transcendent humility, and has been so all these years, but until men's minds on the whole were ready to be enlightened, this mistake was allowed to remain. Prayer to any great and holy spirit is permitted to all men, because they (the great spirits) act as mediators between men on your earth, and the Master Christ, and He in His turn, mediates between man and the Supreme Being. Many of the very great spirits are specially charged to listen to the prayers of the poor suffering egos on your earth, and to give them as much help as they can. They are ministering spirits, mother, and glory in their work for the Great God of the Universe.

"You must understand, mother, that there is a great deal of misconception to be got rid of respecting prayer and its efficacy. People often say: 'Why, I've prayed to God over and over again for something I've wanted awfully badly, and no answer ever came, so I've given it up now, and don't pray any more.'

"Well, prayer is very much more than just asking for something; it is really a means of communication with God, a sort of thinking into Him, so to speak. It's awfully hard to explain, mother, but over here we pray in that way, or rather we try to; it is an effort of the mind to get into touch with God's mind and so to become in a very, very tiny way, a part of Him. Petition is part of prayer, of course, but only a part; and there's another part which is often forgotten, and that is, thanksgiving. Often when prayers have been answered, the thanks have been wanting, or else very feebly expressed. Well, that's slighting the good God's kindness, mother, because you must remember that although the lives of men on the earth and their destinies, are governed by certain laws, yet those laws can be relaxed if the Almighty Ruler chooses that they should be. That accounts for many of the marvellous results of real, earnest, burning prayer. Don't let people think that prayer is only a force which should be employed in times of bitter urgent necessity for either individual, or national relief. It should form part and parcel of the life of every ego on the earth, as it does in our life here. Remember, it is a most mighty force, with consequences and powers far-reaching and long-continued. My Master Christ wants it known that the prayer He gave His friends when He was on the earth before, in Palestine, contains all that is necessary for the comfort of souls on your plane. It is a very, very old prayer; it was old when the Master taught it to the chosen few, but it has lost none of its efficacy. Tell the people on the earth that those who really pray that prayer, and are capable of appreciating the inner meaning, are very far advanced in their own evolution. Old souls like you, mother, are very much to be envied, because it is so much easier for you to grasp the teaching that is coming through now, on all sides you have known it all before, but to others it is hard, and especially to those who have come down the ages hidebound always by spiritual pride, and priestly direction. Those souls who never troubled much about doctrine or creed are easier to influence, as their souls are virgin soil, and there are not the difficulties of intellectual problems to be faced, or the teachings of many well-meaning, but terribly ignorant people. Still, with all the error, and with all the totally unnecessary

burdens that have been laid upon the laity, the power of prayer has never been questioned. It has been limited and curtailed, but the kernel has always been there. Prayer is talking to those on the other side, you know, mother; that's a simpler definition than the other one I gave you, and might be more helpful to a good many unlearned folk; just like holding a conversation with someone on the other side of a wall on earth, whom you know is there, but can't see him. And some parts of the wall are wearing very thin, and some parts have been pierced by small holes, and glimpses can be had of those who are living 'over the top,' as we say when we fight. The holes are getting bigger and bigger, mother, and before so very long the wall will fall down, and there will no longer be, the 'wall of partition,' but people on the earth will recognise as a whole, as some have done already, that the wall only existed in imagination, and could have been pulled down long ago, if the way had not been barred by public opinion."

DECEMBER 6th

"Do not let anyone tempt you to give up the idea of publishing this book, mother, because of its revolutionary teaching. That teaching is the very reason for publishing, not for withholding it. It does not matter a bit how adverse some of the criticism may be; the object is to open people's eyes to the necessity for the real appreciation and definition of the Christian faith, and if it hurts them a bit in the process, so much the better!

"I want to say something about the present system of marriage on your earth. There is a most urgent need for reform there. There is much false reasoning to be done away with. Marriage is the nucleus of family life and home life, on the earth, you can have neither without it at present, excepting under unfair conditions to the mother and the children. True marriage is the union of souls who have come down the ages together, in some form or other of relationship to each other, the one the complement of the other, and not necessarily always husband and wife. Now souls like that will ultimately pass through the great wall of fire together, and never more be separated. But ordinary marriage as it exists on the earth at present, is a much lower, poorer thing. To start with, the conception of it is on a physical basis first; there you have the standard lowered immediately, and a rank materialistic conception given to every single man and woman who propose to ally themselves in the way prescribed by the law of the land - and the Church. And, mark you, it is the Church that lays stress on the physical and materialistic side of the contract, and in open court. So long as that view is publicly held, so long will marriage among the egos on the earth be kept back from holding the high place that it should, in the evolution of the human race. There is very little that is holy about it in the ordinary way, very much that is the reverse. Money plays an important part, so does rank and position. Very seldom are character, and high, lofty, spiritual perceptions either asked or wished for. Take away the present formula as used in the churches of the land, and substitute one putting first the high ideal of spiritual communion and

development, and all-sacrificing love and unselfish devotion, the one ego to the other, and let the physical consequences be made a very secondary matter indeed. Many, many years ago marriage was a very different thing to what it is now; purer, loftier, a really holy thing; it has become debased and degraded to an unbelievable degree. There is also much reformation wanted in the laws of the State which control that condition. All inequality should be done away with, the male ego should stand on the same level as the female. Marriage should be dissolved when both parties need it, after proper investigation, and due regard paid to any children there may be. It should not be considered a disgraceful thing to refuse to break the ties when both parties mutually loathe and detest the bondage. Much will be done in the future through the women of the State to raise the standard of marriage, and to give it its true value. It will never be done by clinging to the formulae prescribed by the Church, which should never have been allowed to take a grip on the population at all. Marriage is a civil institution - in the ordinary way - for the continuation of the race upon the earth. Let it remain so, and do not try to bolster it up and call it a God-given ordinance. It is a foolish attitude, and won't hold water in these days of enlightenment.

“Much more remains to be told you on this question, mother; it is a very important one, because it affects the whole construction of the future human race, but my Master wants it to come to the people gradually. I'll just repeat the gist of it. Marriage should be regarded solely as a civil institution, and should be capable of dissolution, when the bond has become unbearable to both parties. It is much more immoral to continue to live as man and wife under those conditions, than to dissolve the partnership. When my Master is working fully in the earth, much will be taught the people on 'this all-important subject. Woman has long ceased to be the man's chattel in reality; it is time that any suggestion of her inferiority should be expunged both from Prayer Book, and Christian Bible. Now, mother, I must go. Remember all this is being told to you - you are not inventing it.

My love. Tiny, rest now.”

DECEMBER 7th

“All through the history - of the earth there has been the dependence on a power, something higher and bigger than the inhabitants of it. Man has always felt within himself the need for counsel, and protection, while in the physical body, and, at the moment of parting with it, the more than certain feeling of the existence of powers far and away mightier than himself. Some men may say that is all rubbish, what about all the atheists on the earth? There are no honest atheists. I mean that men may spend their lives denying strenuously all existence of the spiritual world, and as follows, naturally, the great God Himself; but at the moment of their physical death, they know that they have lied. Even their very fear is a proof of that. No, mother, there are no men who actually and honestly disbelieve in the power spiritual; they may say they do, they may even teach others the same thing, but it is all deception.

And even those who persist in denying God to the very end, have to acknowledge their mistake over here, not perhaps at first, if they are particularly strong-willed and stubborn, but always eventually. So that brings me to the point of my message to-day, the fact that men on the earth cannot do without God. Many of the clever writers of the past generation, wrote much against the knowledge of God, and much harm they did, for which they are paying now, but they couldn't kill the belief of the world, though they successfully stifled it for a long time. And the real reason for man's dependence on God, and his belief in His existence, is because men know that they are a part of the Almighty God. The knowledge is only just a flicker of light in their minds and they don't know much about it, and understand less, but it is a dim shadowy remembrance carried down from all the ages of the history of the world, of the fact that all men are little bits of God, split off from Him, so to speak, in the beginning of time on your earth, and sent there to live in material bodies for age upon age, and slowly evolve, and finally work back to union with the Greatest One Himself - but with mighty individuality, and continuing to work, and create, and mature, through all eternity. Now and again there are souls on the earth who realise this colossal man - that means the ideal man, mother - and spend their earth lives striving to attain the highest. These are great souls, mother, and watched with much interest here. To them will be given the choice at the end of their earth lives, to go on to the highest heaven, or to return once more to earth, to help struggling humanity.

“The truth of man's dependence on God is applied to all nations, not only to Christians of the Western world. Every nation has its conception of God, false and cruel as some of them may be. Still, their ideal does represent something above and beyond themselves, and that is the point, because no nation can reach up to anything beyond its capability; it's only a matter of time, till all have the same white and beautiful conception of the office and existence of the Supreme Being, as we have here. And, of course, with that innate belief in the existence of God, is also the knowledge of one's own immortality. You can't be immortal at one end only, you know, mother; it must be at both. Some people have taught that immortality is a thing to be gained for us, by the death of Jesus of Nazareth on the Cross. That's wrong, mother. Immortals we are from the very beginning, being part of God, Who is the Essence of Immortality. No one can gain it for us; we cannot gain it for ourselves, because we are it. Can you understand, mother? I'm pouring all the force into you that I can, to get this message through correctly, and Bruno is helping.”

(“Oh yes, darling.”)

“That's all right, then; I can go on. Immortality is the state derived from God; it is a possession of our innermost selves, the imperishable ego. My message must be told, mother; it's all- important just now. Much of the teaching respecting immortality owed its origin to that great worker for Christ, Paul of Tarsus, as he is called here. Paul worked for the cause of the Master harder than anyone has before or since, but great psychic and spiritualist as he was, his knowledge was limited, and he could

only give out the teaching to the people, as far as he was capable of receiving it himself. As now, so then. All communications from this side through people on the earth, are coloured more or less, by the mentality of the medium, it cannot be helped, and so all the writings of Paul, much of which he received by direct communication from this side, are coloured by his own training and orientalism. He would be the first to acknowledge his limitation, were he working again on the earth. But his teachings on the spirit life are very real and true, mother, especially when he speaks of the two bodies, spiritual and natural. He knew there were two existing together, though people have distorted that teaching, and said it meant that there was a spiritual body after death, or some even said that there would be one after what they called the resurrection. Paul knew an enormous lot, mother, of psychic conditions, and it is an awful pity for the world that his teaching has not been taken in the way that it should have been. The authorities of his Church have had a peculiar pleasure in taking some of his statements, and even those of the Master Christ perfectly plain and straightforward though they were - and giving them a totally different interpretation.

“Still, the great doctrine of immortality stands out like a beacon on a hill; an inherent possession of all egos, not gained by way of reward, nor paid for with a price.”

DECEMBER 8th

“Do not let anyone imagine that promises made to people on the earth by the Almighty God are to be lightly regarded, they should be treated with the utmost reverence. Very many promises have been made from time to time to the inhabitants of the earth by the mouth of specially-trained and appointed teachers. Not always at once have the promises been fulfilled, but in the very end the confirmation came. It is not such a usual thing now for God to communicate with the earth people in such an intimate fashion, but the time is coming when that will be the case again. Certain future happenings will be mentioned before they come to pass, for the guidance of the nation, and much will come through in that way from automatic writing. Some of the prophecies, because that is what it really means, will be spoken ones by human agents, under influence from this side. It is all on a par with the linking up of the material with the spiritual world, and also will prove a very tremendous help in the difficulties that lie ahead in the reconstruction of the State, and the betterment of the inhabitants. What could and did happen in the far distant past, can and does happen in the present time. God will teach and guide even more directly in the next fifty years, than has been done since the time when the rulers of the earth were great spirits from this side. That Golden Age was a most glorious time in the world's history, mother, and we have been learning a good deal about it lately. Some of the very mightiest people who are living in the world now, were alive and working then, and are now finishing their long initiation of earth life. Foch, the French general, was alive then, mother, but he wasn't a soldier, but a priest, and served the Manu of that

time faithfully and well. He is a magnificent ego, mother one of the greatest who has ever lived on the earth. And there is another great soul still alive on the earth, and that is the Greek statesman, Venizelos. He was a friend of mine, they say here, mother, in those far-off days, and we were both soldiers! It did make me laugh when I was told that, because it seemed so funny at first, that an old man of another nation, and alive now, could have been a great friend of mine - an English boy! But I soon understood, and I'm looking forward awfully to the time when I shall see him again. This is not meant for a message about reincarnation, mother, I just wandered off into that subject through the other. And now I will switch back to it. God's promises really mean God's fulfilment of his plans for mankind, revealed sooner than in the ordinary way. The Master Christ wants it particularly known, mother, that the word of God never fails, though often it looks as if perhaps He had forgotten or didn't care very much. It is only man's impatience that says that. God is unswerving in all His ways, and He takes a really intimate interest in the affairs and troubles of the nations. Nothing is too trivial for Him, mother; nothing escapes His approval or His condemnation. You must not forget that this great and wonderful Being has an army of servants under Him with different powers, and authority of varying degree, and then all of us in the spirit world have our duties and little bits of work to do, as we increase in the knowledge here. There is nothing left to chance, mother, all is perfectly orderly, and carried out according to certain great laws. We are much interested in all the wonderful making of government, and are now allowed to be taught some of the intricacies of the working. You see, mother, the earth you live on is only a very tiny fraction of the universe, there are thousands of other worlds, all in various stages of evolution, and all being guided and guarded in the same wonderful way as you are. We couldn't take it in at first, it was such a stupendous fact, but we set to work to learn as much as we could, and jolly interesting it is. You can't wonder, can you, mother, when I tell you what a magnificent life this is, that I wouldn't come back (in the old way) to the earth world for anything?"

("No, I quite understand, darling, and I just rejoice to hear it.")

"You are a brick, mother, a chap can say a thing like that to you without fearing you'll take it the wrong way. You will know for yourself when you come over, but I expect you'll take things a bit more quietly than I did. But I don't know; you'll find it all marvellous, I'm sure, and everyone so awfully kind and friendly...."

DECEMBER 9th

("Are you here, Tiny darling?")

"Yes, mother, just as usual. I've really been here some time and watched you resting in the big chair. You haven't altered a scrap, mother, though your hair is so white now, but it doesn't make you look any older really, and many years will pass before you are really an old woman."

“Oh, Tiny darling, does it mean that I have got to stay on the earth a long time?”)

“Yes, it does, mother. You’ve a big work to do for the Master, and it can’t be hurried. Never mind the waiting, mother, we shall not forget you over here. You can’t come to me, mother, till you’ve finished your job on the earth.

“Much of my work now is helping those souls who have lately come over and who are burning with indignation against the wickedness of the German nation. We have a difficult time with them, because it is perfectly natural they should feel that resentment. As I have told you before, mother, people don’t change when they come over here, all at once, and to get these people to recognize the great purpose underlying all the awful suffering and misery of the last four years on your earth, is no easy matter. They will learn in time, but some of them have seen such awful sights while the Germans were in France and Belgium, that we sympathize with them with all our hearts, though at the same time we try to shew them the necessity for forgiveness on their side.

“We know that there is still much trouble ahead on your earth, much strife, much tumult, much parting of the ways. But it does not mean the death throes of the nations, but the birth pangs of a new era of civilization and spiritual advancement. And, mother, you know, the children of this generation, especially in England, are going to be given more chances of improvement in body, as well as in mind, than has ever been offered to them before: And it is a bigger thing too in other ways. It is not the result only of the efforts of a few enlightened egos, it is the wish of the nation, that the moral, and mental, and physical condition, of these youthful egos should be put on a far higher footing than has been the case in the past. In time, people will come to see that the consequences which resulted from the most terrible war the world has ever seen, far outweighed the miseries and the pains of the individuals who took part in it. It has really been a baptism of blood for the whole world, and the result will be - not all at once though, and people must bear that in mind - a cleaner, saner, higher national life in every nation; progress in Science and Arts, material prosperity, manners improved, laws equalized, suffering ameliorated, poverty something to be remedied in the right way, and looked upon as a national disgrace, should it occur for any reason excepting the ego’s own misguided behaviour. This war, you know, mother, has been a wonderful cleansing, though perhaps the time has hardly yet come for the people on the earth to take that view. It has brought into prominent relief so much that was noble and beautiful, and reduced to the background a great deal of what the world would have called ‘essentials’ before the War. Don’t let anyone think that men will ever be called upon to deny the prints of the passion of the nation.”

“Have I got that right?”)

“Yes, mother, you’ve got it right, but it does sound a bit mystifying, I’m afraid. It is just this really. The travail of the world these last four years is regarded here, as something akin to the pilgrimage of every soul on the earth, only the suffering and

sorrow has been collective and universal, instead of individual and isolated. And we can see the path so many people have trodden is really like the path to Calvary, trodden by the faithful worker Jesus of Nazareth for the Master's sake. All the sacrifices, all the self-surrender, all the tears, all the awful loneliness, all the bereavement, are really milestones on the way to Calvary, of so many. Those who trod that path in the same spirit of that great Syrian, really and truly touch the cross of complete renunciation, and in so doing bring themselves very, very near indeed to the Master Christ, whose Holy Name be praised.

"Mother, Hilarion is here. May I wait and finish afterwards?"

"My word is this: take no thought for the future. Let your mind and body be occupied only with your work for the Master Christ, All will be given to you that you most desire. My word will remain with you. Hilarion has spoken."

("Are you still here, darling?")

"Yes, mother, the great one has gone. You are much to be congratulated, mother, in being the object of that Master's attention.

DECEMBER 10th

"Lots of people fail to recognize the prominent part that small things play in the affairs of the world. Unconsidered trifles they are called, but they all have their uses and their niche, in the work of evolution. Spoken words, lightly uttered, careless actions, many passing thoughts, bring results undreamed of by the persons responsible for them. That is the point of my message to-day, the importance of unimportant incidents. There isn't such a thing as chance or luck, though the world thinks so. Nothing happens without a reason or a cause, either in material or spiritual matters. And that being so, the Master wishes people to become more alive to the seriousness of their life, in the physical body. Not that He wishes them to go about with long faces and much lack of merriment (my old expression, mother!); quite the reverse, but He wants them to realize more fully that this world is a serious place to live in, because of its effect on their position in the next life, the one immediately following this. Some people think, you know, mother, that all their mistakes in earth life will be wiped out immediately they leave the physical body, if they have confessed their misdoings to a priest very shortly before. Well, they won't, and the sooner people rid themselves of that mischievous doctrine, the better for them. This earth life is only a preparation, you know, for the fuller life here, but on that preparation depends future happiness or unhappiness. It cannot be brought home too strongly or too practically to all souls, that much more should be done by them with the opportunities given to them while still what they call 'alive.' I mean in all sorts of ways, because earth life has for its object, the forming of character, the only thing that counts in the life here. Steady performance of all duties, rigid watch over thoughts, as well as words and actions, sympathy with less fortunate egos, strong affection for those with whom he is bound by ties of blood or attachment,

forgetfulness of self in remembrance of others, should be the common daily goal of every enlightened ego. Not done with an eye to avoiding unpleasant conditions over here, but with the single-minded desire to serve the Master Christ as far as he is able, and to progress as far as possible on the highest possible lines in the time allotted to him. Life is a wonderful thing, mother, we don't understand it all here, but we do know what a glorious inheritance it is. Can you speak to people about this, mother, especially the children, and make them see that as they live here, so they will live with us? No one wants to have a beastly uncomfortable home, with a crowd of people round one who don't minister to any one of our aspirations, but rather deride them, and try to drag us down, but that's the lot of a good many souls over here, until they have worked through, and are free to come to a happier part of the spirit world. How much better it would have been if they had worked through it here. Always, remember, mother, that in the Master's sight the effort to rise above one's surroundings counts for much, even if the result should be poor. Keep on trying, and success will come in the end.

"There's another point too, which people overlook. The little things on your earth, are very often considered very big things over here, so don't let anyone think that any effort to subdue the lower nature, or to help another struggling ego, is too insignificant to be worth the attempt. Character makes, or mars, the ego on the earth, remember that, mother, and also this, that the remaking over here of an imperfect or very mutilated character, is always a very painful process. Little things are capable of producing great results, little actions are capable of developing into most important consequences, little efforts of love and kindness can become very mighty levers of hope for the redemption of humanity.

"Now, mother, there is just one other thing I want to say. Never attempt to argue at present with those people who still hold to that mistaken notion that their misdoings have been paid for vicariously. It is utterly false, so false that we shudder at the bare notion, and it is mainly responsible for the backward state of the world at the present time. But leave it alone, you cannot convince those people, they are living up to the ideal as far as they can conceive it; it must appear in the book, it is one of the most important parts of the new teaching. Now I must go.

My love, mother. Tiny, rest now."

DECEMBER 11th

"Creative force is one of the most wonderful powers that are the result of high development, mother, and one which we share with the Almighty God. That great power does not come for a long time, not till after many years of hard strenuous training, but it does come, and it is a power to be looked forward to by every ego on the earth. All the old legends and fairy tales, you know, mother, were not just nonsense stories, they all had the grain of truth in them, the result of shadowy belief in what is termed the miraculous, handed down throughout the ages. There is much that is very highly advanced and spiritual, to be learned from the folklore of different

countries, and people would do well to study them with an open mind, and disconnect the palpable rubbish from the real truth. Not old wives' tales to be told in the twilight as a sort of game for the children, but deep mysteries, to be pondered over and studied by the earnest seeker after truth. Stories that are of unknown antiquity have, come down to the present day child, as simply fairy tales, with the real mystical teaching forgotten, but it is there all the same, just as it was in the far distant days of the past. My Master wants people to think over this message, mother, it means a very great deal, and what I am going to say may sound absolute rubbish, but - it isn't! That creative power can be gained by very advanced egos while still in the physical body."

("Will you explain a bit?")

"Yes, I will, mother, I know it's a startler! Well, what I mean is this: there are some people who are very highly developed psychically, and who after years of arduous toil, and the very severest discipline, have reached such a state of spiritual advancement that they can employ those powers to which most people only succeed in attaining, after long training here in the spirit world. These people are always working under the guidance and authority of one of the 'Great Ones,' called Masters, on the earth, and they are able at a certain stage of their progress to create material things. You are being told this, mother, because some of those people have had to suffer a very great deal from the scorn and malice of the earth dwellers, and we wish now to declare that those people were not impostors, but possessors of certain powers, inherent in all egos, which had been allowed to develop to a supernatural degree, by the direct permission of the Almighty God for a particular purpose. Further, the time has come when many more people will shew they are possessed of the same power. They are not to be treated as charlatans, but as workers for the Master Christ on certain lines of their own, directed by responsible teachers on the earth. This is rather a wonderful message, isn't it, mother, and awfully interesting. I've got lots more to say, so I hope you can go on writing a bit longer. Well, this force is being directed in all sorts of ways, and will have a marked influence in the next era of the world's evolution. Much care must be exercised in using it, and it will only be allowed for very special purposes, under stringent precautions, and not very often. It is all part of the close connection between the planes, and means another big hole in the 'veil.' It is to be treated with marked reverence, because no one who is able to exercise that power while still in the physical body, could have reached it without years of self-denial and self-sacrifice. My Master Hilarion is here with me, and wants to add a word to the message."

"Hilarion is here. As you are my pupil, I wish to warn you against allowing yourself to entertain the least doubt of the truth of the messages which are reaching you from your son. My words are true. Wait, and work, and pray. Hilarion has spoken."

DECEMBER 12th

"As regards the teaching of re-incarnation that I have passed on to you, mother, I

want to say just this. A great many of us are being taught the truth of it here, and are told to pass it on to our people on the earth. But only those are taught who believe what they are told, and that is the reason why some messages from our side say it is true, and some say they have never heard it mentioned. It took my teacher, Frank of Oxford, a long time to grasp, and to some it still remains a rock of offence, even when it is explained that it is not a universal law.

“There are other points in the teaching coming through to you which would be as hotly contested here as they will be on the earth, simply because men do not change their opinions when they come over here, if they have obstinately clung to them on earth, and refused to listen to any explanation other than the orthodox, conventional, one. That explains the discrepancy between different communications on things spiritual. And, of course, many people have not the same experience of life here. This is a vast place, you know, mother, with many varying conditions of life, and a person can only describe his own environment and how it affects him. Even if two messages came from two souls in exactly the same state, they wouldn't give a precisely similar description. People must not think that the diversities of account point to fraud and imagination on the part of the mediums. It would if all the descriptions tallied! It is their totally opposite character, sometimes, which is a proof of their genuineness. Those people who object to the differences, belong to that class who are not ready to realize that death does not alter a person's character, and that there are just as many different states of existence as there are on the earth. They persist in thinking that the after life is like either one gigantic field, where everybody walks about wearing a crown, and playing a harp, or else a place of dreamless sleep, till everybody wakes up at what they call the last day! If they would only allow themselves to think a bit they would laugh at such notions.

“We are being trained now in the exercise of further powers, all with the view of helping forward the reconstruction of the world. We are learning much now from the great scientists and reformers of the past, so as to be able to influence all the egos on the earth whose duties lie in those directions. You can't imagine how interesting it is, mother, and how important we feel! Can't you see me roaring with laughter at the notion of influencing a grey-bearded old gentleman, old enough to be my grandfather, who would have taken no more notice of me than he would of a fly, if he knew me in the ordinary earth way! Strange but true, and we do enjoy the work.

“It may be there will be more trouble with Germany, but I'm not allowed to say more than that.”

DECEMBER 13th

“My message for the book will interest you very much, mother, because it has to do with the meeting of friends here. And that doesn't mean after the physical death of both parties only, but it also refers to the meeting in the astral world, when souls still in the body, come over here when their earthly bodies are sleeping at night. Do you know, mother, you come regularly now, and we do have such a good time. I always

watch for you, and just rush when I see you coming. You are always full of life and energy here, and want to know such a lot, and we tell you all we can. Sometimes we go for a walk to other parts, but always we manage to have just a look at the children, because you think of me so much as a small boy. We know that the time is not far distant when you will be able to remember all that you see and hear on this side, and that is really the big work for which you are being so severely trained just now. You won't really have the power, or become clairvoyant, till you are strong again, but there is no tearing hurry, and my Master Christ will then use you very much more. Stephen is always so pleased when you come over; and there is another soul here, mother, who has lately come to my part of the spirit world, who says he is your father, and he was most awfully glad to know you were writing for us. He has had a very long training, not in a very sorrowful part though, because he had so much to learn of the power of the love of Christ, and duty to the brethren. He has worked through now, and is ready for his special bit of work. He will probably be allowed to write through you later on. I saw him when I first came over, as he was allowed to meet me, but then he had to go back to his discipline, and I did not see him again till the other day. When you come over the next time, I'll make sure that he meets you, but sometimes I don't know where everybody is at the right moment, because we are all scattered about, and sometimes not able to leave the particular bit of work we are doing. Well, that's all about that.

“Now I want to say a word about the wonderful work of rebuilding the Church on the earth. First of all it can't be done by inducing a large number of men to become clergymen, and collecting much money for that purpose. Reform must come from the root of the whole matter, and that means that the doctrine of vicarious atonement must be utterly abolished. No progress will be made while that is still taught in church, and Sunday-school. It is the very biggest block in the way of spiritual advancement. To that must be added another mistaken notion, treating the Master Christ and Jesus of Nazareth, as one person instead of two distinct personalities. Then again, the words in the Creed 'born of the Virgin Mary,' have a very different meaning to the orthodox interpretation that the great Master Jesus was the son of an unmarried mother. It doesn't mean that at all, mother, and even after all these years, it is casting a slur on the honour of a very spiritual, advanced ego. It (born of 'the Virgin Mary) simply means that Christ our Master, descended once more into the world of matter and was housed for a time in the physical body of a Syrian carpenter. The idea of a miraculous birth is a false one, and we do not understand why so much stress has been laid upon it by priests on the earth. It isn't even peculiar to the Christian religion, but is a common notion among many other creeds, from the earliest times. We think that fact alone would have made people ponder, and realize that the meaning must be spiritual and not material. It's of no consequence, either, to the development of the ego.

The only important part of the Christian faith is belief in the descent of the great Master Christ on the earth, as a reformer, and a pattern of the perfect life that all

have the power to attain. Not death, but life, is what He taught. The Church has pinned its belief to the death, and let the life sink into comparative insignificance. This is my message to-night, mother, for the world to read, 'I am come that ye might have life and to have it more abundantly'."

DECEMBER 14th

"Service to others, you know, mother, is the highest ideal of humanity here, and in your world. As I told you a few days ago, in some souls it culminates when they refuse the entry into the highest spheres, and choose to return once more to the earth to help the souls there. Well, of course, that line of service is not required of any and everyone, but in a lesser degree it is the most widely praised form of material worship of the Master Christ and the great God, given the right motive and the ungrudging spirit. Do not heed the argument that too much service for others makes those others selfish, that is not for you to judge, you are only concerned in giving the service; the result is to be left in higher hands. Supposing it does look as if self-denial of one ego made another ego more self-indulgent, what then? You can't tell now what influence your example is going to have on that ego in the next earth life. Never mind all those false arguings, mother, they are really specious tricks of the Black Forces. You might almost as well say that the love poured out on one ego who doesn't respond, or even value it, is no use. Not a bit of it, whatever the world may say. And when people tell you you should not be so unselfish because it produces no corresponding effort, it simply means that they are annoyed because their unselfishness gets no recognition, and that shews how far they are from the real application of unselfish service, as duty to the rest of humanity. Service done for reward or recognition, is a poor thing, mother, and do tell people that they must teach themselves not to feel hurt, if their little bits of help and kindness fail to bring even a smile of thanks. 'So-and-so takes it all for granted' is an expression often heard. Well, never mind if he does, he'll know better some day, and in the meanwhile go on piling up the service all the more. Ingratitude is one of the commonest faults of people on the earth, mother, and the hardest to refrain from criticizing or noticing. All the great teachers realized, that, there is nothing harder for an unselfish ego to endure than forgetfulness of kindness done, sometimes at very great sacrifice, and not always remaining at that, but going on to definite injury and black treachery. Still, it is a lesson that has to be learnt, as the Master Christ taught His friends in the prayer that He gave them. All these lessons, you know, though they seem so difficult to learn on the earth, are of tremendous value to the soul when he comes over here; those souls have such an infinitely higher perception of spirituality, and so very soon slip into the ways of living here. They are worth the learning - for that reason alone.

"Now, mother, there is just one other thing I want to talk about, and that is the relative position of sinner and saint on the earth. There is no real difference. My words are rather horrifying you, mother, aren't they? Not in the sight of the

Almighty God, I mean. It is only that one has progressed at a far greater rate than the other, and learnt his lessons better, and so taken a higher place in his class. The other, backward and slow though he may be, is still a member of the school, and the great Headmaster knows that it is only a question of time, before he too will be in the top form, That's what I meant, mother, and I simply love to give you that message, because of what it really means. No final destruction, no permanent punishment, only longer school-time till all the lessons are learned. Now I must go.

My love, mother, Tiny, rest now."

DECEMBER 15th

"There is nothing more necessary for the soul who is honestly striving to climb higher and higher up the way to God, than to let all his real aims be focussed on the life here, and all his aspirations fixed on the highest in spiritual life that he can attain to. There is a text in the Christian Bible which bears on this to a certain extent, and that is: 'Ye may not serve God and Mammon.' Well, of course you might say that that implies neglecting your duties on the earth, but it doesn't really mean that. If you are truly and faithfully serving the Almighty God, the world's attractions have no meaning for you, because you know they are just shadows of realities in the spirit life. And so you just take them at their proper valuation, remaining God's servant, and the world's master. That's the real point of my message, mother, keeping yourself free from the power of the glitter and glare of the joys of earth life, and remaining always 'captain of your soul.' That's the high Christ-like ideal for every soul incarnate in a fleshly body. Always to put the spirit life first, and the earth life second; though enjoying all the beauties and happiness of the latter, still treating it as something vastly inferior to the life and progress on this side. All the struggles of men on the earth are watched over here, particularly when we remember our friends as well as I remember mine. It is different with some people who were lonely in the world, and have come over here leaving no one behind whom they regretted, and no one to regret them. Memory fades very quickly then, as there is no reason for its existence, and that kind of soul starts life here with a blank page. I'm awfully glad I'm allowed to remember so much, mother, and it won't fade a bit, my teachers tell me. And I'm just as keen on all that's happening in the world, although I naturally see the results and consequences a good deal clearer than you do. And what is so awfully jolly for me, mother, is the knowledge that I'm really of some use here now, and on the earth too. Do you know, mother, some of my men who have come over lately told me, that they knew I was there with them, and one of them said he actually heard me giving the words of command like I used to do! I was bucked when he told me this, because of course I was there, and doing exactly what he said, but I couldn't know if any of the men realized it. Some of my men who came over with me are developing awfully fast, and my orderly, Harold Godfrey, is one of them. He's simply splendid, mother, and still my faithful orderly, and he says it doesn't matter what our different conditions are now, he is always going to think of me as his

officer, and that he'll always stick to me! Of course that's just his way of expressing his affection and devotion to me, but it's also just another proof of the continuation of individuality. My Master wants me to press that home a bit further, mother, because it cannot be mentioned too often or too strongly. Individuality lasts through all Eternity. Let the world recognize that. Highest happiness does not mean its extinction. From the beginning of time each ego has been a member of the Almighty God, and a separate conscious entity, and so it always will be. Changes may occur in development, naturally, as evolution progresses, but the innermost core of the person, is changeless. You see what I mean, mother, don't you? Advancement and progression must mean change in one sense, but it is always the same person who is changing and advancing. You're the same person that you were when you were a baby, but you're vastly different all the same. We know some people have the notion that the very highest finished development means loss of personality. Let me repeat again and again that it doesn't. This is rather an important message, mother, and is sent to comfort those thinking souls who torture themselves unnecessarily, by imagining that after all they won't keep their friends for ever, as there will come a time when individuality would be swamped and swallowed up in the Eternal Godhead. They need not have the least fear, mother, that's only another bogey set up by certain sects of teachers on the earth. Love is eternal, friendship is eternal; individuality is imperishable and immortal."

DECEMBER 16th

"Do not let people imagine that the ideal life as shewn in these messages is impossible of maturing. It is perfectly possible for every single soul on the earth, though perhaps not achieved in one earth life; but the effort made is carried forward to the next incarnation in the flesh, and is so much to the good. People on the earth must get out of the way of wanting to do things and see the results quickly, mother; accomplishment is not their concern, but the effort to achieve is. Hurry and bustle are unknown here, and too much is made of them on the earth. Of course we know conditions are very different in certain ways, physical death fixes a limit of time to be used, and then there is the competition that is always going on; but will you ask people, mother, to get it into their heads, that it is not the length of time the ego spends on the earth that is important, but the way in which that time has been spent. It is no use fussing because he can't get on faster or do more, all those agitations are really keeping him back. Let him endeavour to do each daily duty with the love of God and the Master Christ in his heart, and not bother about 'saving his soul,' as so many people express it. Let him do all he can to cheer and help other people, and his soul will save itself right enough. People also confound the use of the word 'soul'; they think it is a possession apart from themselves, instead of being of one piece; they speak of having a soul instead of 'I am a soul,' living for a time in a material body. That explanation is quite a simple one, but puts a different interpretation to a conventional expression. So much of the present day difficulties, and false teaching, and downright unbelief, could be easily demolished with a more intelligent and

modern interpretation of set forms and expressions. In the Creed there still stands the sentence 'the resurrection of the body.' Well, mother, you know to the bulk of unthinking people that is still interpreted as a coming to life again of the physical body that is put away as a worn-out garment, when the ego has finished with it, however distant that event may have been, or under what conditions it happened! Could anything be more absurd? If only the authorities of the Church would be brave enough to face what they must know is impossible of acceptance, and reconstruct that sentence, it would mean a very big hole in the veil. This is how it should run, mother, and how we are taught it here: 'the survival of a body.' A very small difference, but - how vital. Will you see what you can do, mother, in talking to your friends, to put the right view to them? It would revolutionize all their thoughts; no thinking man can believe that bodies which have crumbled to dust thousands of years ago, their graves vanished, every trace gone, are coming out of the ground in those very bodies, at what they describe as the sound of the last trumpet! Of course they can't, and that explains why so many people have refused to believe in a future life at all, because it was presented to them in such a grotesque and impossible manner. The alteration of words does not alter the fact of survival, it only makes intelligent what before was simply silly. If only people would be firm in their resolution to demand purer teaching from the priests, they would get it - in time. The fact of survival after death, was demonstrated by the Master Christ, when, after the death of the disciple Jesus, He shewed Himself to many people in the form of that faithful worker, but it was not the poor, tortured, earthly body, that His friends saw. The body they saw was a materialization of that great soul used by the Master Christ, for further teaching. Does it not seem strange, mother, that though they saw Him appearing and disappearing, they yet could imagine it was the flesh and blood body they had seen crucified? Well, some people haven't grown much wiser yet, but many are only too glad to have their doubts and fears appeased by a reasonable and true account of what really happened. When this great discovery on which the present Master of Trinity is working,\* mother, comes to a successful issue, the world will know by the evidence of their own eyes that what I tell you in these messages is true. Now I must go.

My love, mother. Tiny, rest now."

\* I do not know to what Tiny is referring. - JESSIE PLATTS.

DECEMBER 17th

"All that the Master Christ taught the people in Syria 2,000 years ago, and all that He will teach the people in the West this time, is the true faith and real knowledge of the Almighty God, and the final destiny of humanity. Such a big scheme, mother, such a mighty conception of the progress of which every soul is capable. Well may people speak of the teaching as supernormal! It is, but it isn't supernatural, and the world must learn to understand the difference between these two expressions. To the former belong all the powers which exist in everyone but only develop to their

fulness in those who submit themselves to severe discipline on the earth - and in the spirit world, after the shedding of the physical body. The second really doesn't exist; in the minds of the unenlightened egos on the earth, its meaning suggests startling apparitions, ghosts, as they say, and all sorts of superstitious fancies. Nothing can be above nature, mother, really supernatural, but there is much that is above the normal, and that's the right word to use when describing psychic powers or manifestations.

"Now, mother, there is something very important I want to pass on to you to-day, and it is this: as men develop spiritually, so their supernormal powers will; very gradually of course, but still advancing, and this is going to be one of the most important progressions in the life of souls on the earth in this next race, which is slowly being collected, and cemented, from the most advanced egos of the Anglo-Saxon race on the earth now. So when any power of the kind I am referring to, shews itself in any ego, old or young, it must be specially regarded as a very marked sign of the higher spiritual advancement of that soul, and also of the headway of the influence of the Master Christ's work on the earth. It will take a very long time to dislodge the mass of materialism which has covered the earth, but it can be done, and is being done already. Sober-minded men, and thinking women, are not ashamed to confess their absolute conviction that this war was won by the Allies through special intervention from the other side. It is a much more definite expression than the pious thanksgiving of the orthodox church-goers, because those people mean that practical help was sent. They are right, of course, you know that, mother, but it is a very big step in the right direction, and one that would have seemed impossible for them some years ago. When that belief is universal, mother, there will come sudden and rapid development, because, naturally, great spirits from our side can work much more powerfully, when the human egos are willing and longing to be taught. Before you come over here, mother, you will see most marvellous results of spirit help, and you will remember you were told beforehand. The very mightiest works that can be conceived will be undertaken, and accomplished with little or no difficulty. Now, mother, I shall have to go, as my teacher, Frank of Oxford, is calling me, but don't be led away by doubts or fears of the truth of the messages. They are all coming true as fast as they can.

My love, mother. Tiny, rest now."

DECEMBER 18th

"And the next thing is that there is no need for any anxiety about the book; it will be published quite soon and many people will read it. Try not to be impatient, mother, it's all working for your development on the highest spiritual lines.

"Be sure of this, that the world will learn more in the next generation of the nature of spiritual things, than it has since the Master Christ's manifestation as a world teacher. The Great War has been the means, terrible though it was as an instrument. Do you know, mother, not one of us here regrets his death in battle the Very tiniest

bit, although most of us were fairly young; we are only too pleased that we have been the means of bringing home to millions on the earth, the certainty of continuity of existence. We often have long talks about it and we always say, 'Well, I'd do just the same again.' We mean it, mother. We rather felt the separation immediately we entered the spirit world, and it took us a little time to realize that there wasn't any separation, and then we simply went straight on, rejoicing in the honour done to us by the Master Christ, in allowing us to be witnesses for Him. Say much of this to people on the earth, please, mother, it will cheer us up no end; not that we are in the least need of cheering up, but it will help a lot of other chaps on this side as well, who are not so far advanced as we are, and who still find it hard to believe they are more alive than they were before they died. That's a bit Irish, isn't it, mother, but it's a jolly good way of expressing it. And now look here, don't dare to be unhappy on Christmas Day, mother! You may have to struggle pretty hard against the depressed feeling, but mind you do.... And I shall be with you all day, mother, and I'll come along to Trinity with you just as I did when I had my last earth Christmas; so be just as happy and jolly, as if I were there in the old earth way. I shall sing as loudly as I can in chapel, too, mother, and I only wish you could hear me! I thought that would make you laugh, mother, because my singing was never much to boast of, was it? Now I must go.

My love, mother. Tiny, rest now."

DECEMBER 19th

"Look out for much that is interesting in the literature now being given to the world, and even in the speeches made by public men. You will notice that now and again a clause, a sentence, a word, an anecdote, all point to the belief in the spirit life, spiritual help, spiritual manifestations on the earth, and spiritual communications. The door is opening, ever wider and wider, mother, and a great flood of light streaming out to the darkness of the material life, as such. Do your utmost to widen that opening, mother. Speak of me as often as you can, as working hard, and thoroughly happy, and enjoying my life here. It will help people, too, if you can get them to read and investigate for themselves, but always warn them that investigation must be carried on under proper direction. Be very careful about that, please, mother, it is the last thing that the Master wants, to make all the world run after every fortune-teller and clairvoyant they come across, and be grossly deceived and betrayed: immense harm would be done to the subject and the people themselves. But those who are in earnest, and pursue the study with honesty of purpose, commonsense, and level-headedness, will reap enormous benefit. We hope to see before very long all this psychic investigation controlled by the proper people, and that in those churches where the priests are spiritualists, certain mediums should be retained by them, and work as part of the staff. It will come, mother. The Master Christ also wants me to say very emphatically, that the properly trained psychic is not to be confounded with the medicine-man, or wizard, of certain African

tribes - this is told to you, mother, because He knows that certain orthodox people, both priests and laity, will raise that cry at once. Tell them to read the story of the birth of Jesus of Nazareth, and ask them whom they suppose the 'wise men' were. Nothing more or less than Eastern adepts, mother, psychics of the highest spiritual order! They'll probably look a little blue when you bring them to book like that, but they deserve it for not troubling to use their intelligence, even in a simple matter like that.

DECEMBER 20th

"It is a curious thing, you know, mother, that people on the earth always want something to hang their faith on, so to speak; they do not now, although they did once, allow themselves to be able to conceive of a religion based on the belief in the Almighty God and the great Master Christ, without something tangible. They want a centre figure, for instance, and then they build round that all sorts of legends, and half beliefs, and ceremonies, and symbols, some with no meaning at all, and some with the real meaning lost. To us it is very hard to understand. We have learnt so much since we came over and we know that pure religion, as I have explained it to you, mother, is quite independent of all those things. That is something which the major part of earth dwellers could not possibly understand now, and so for the present their worship must be accompanied by many outward forms, but they could learn, if they would, that worship does not depend on them. I think that many people would be glad to be told that, mother, because it would help to give them a much more spiritual idea of the real worship of the Almighty God."

("Have you no churches or temples on your side?")

"Yes, mother, we have all sorts of buildings for worship, but they are empty, only filled with glorious colours and heavenly music. There is none of the usual church furniture here, and we always feel when we enter one of these buildings, that in very truth it is the house of God. I can't quite describe the service to you, mother, because there is nothing to express it in earth language, which I use when I talk to you, but it is full of indescribable peace and happiness, and aspiration of the loftiest kind. The different colours in the different temples have meanings, mother, they stand for the different ways in which the worship of the Greatest One, and the love of the Master Christ, reaches them. Some get it through their intellect, some through affection, some through beauty, and so on. We find it rests us enormously to attend these services, mother, some wonderful strength seems to flow into us, and makes us more fit to do our work for the Master. All the weariness of spirit seems to leave us then, because, you know, mother, we do feel tired in that way sometimes, especially if we have had a sad or difficult job to do. And then we remember that after all we can't expect to be perfect beings for a very long time, and must expect to be weary sometimes. Do you know, mother, sometimes I feel as if you were really helping me enormously, and that means that your love and prayers for me come straight along a telephone wire, and reach me in full force. I always know when I'm feeling specially

heartened up in my work that it is your co-operation on the earth that is giving it to me. Will you be sure to include this in the book, mother? because it is such an important factor in discussing the reality of communication between the planes - that the friends on earth can be of the most tremendous assistance to those on the other side. Now I shall have to go, mother, because there is much work waiting for me. Tiny, rest now.”

DECEMBER 21st

“The world at present is blind to a good deal that is of the utmost importance for the future of the well-being of the inhabitants. This is a practical material message, mother, but it has its bearing on the spiritual life. There is much unrest on the earth in all classes, and much may develop. We are seeing to it that in England and America, the risks are nothing like so great as in the nations in Europe. Partly from the point of view that the two nations who speak the same tongue are ordained to be the bulwarks for the peace of the world, and partly because in those countries, men’s passions have not been stirred to the depths as has been the case in France and Belgium, for instance, and so, comparatively speaking, there is no hate in the hearts of the English or Americans. Stem regard for justice, yes - but that’s a different thing. That being so, our task is easier, because our influence is more readily felt. But we would warn the rulers of these two countries to be extremely careful in the handling of the masses for the next few years. They must be strong, they must be just, they must realise how much must be done to purify and benefit the conditions of the workers, but they must not trifle. They must demand, and legislate to the effect, that the workman must give fair labour in return for higher wages and better home conditions. It must not be a one-sided bargain. If so, in a very few years, the State, would be controlled to a very large extent by a shrieking, clamouring crowd of discontented malcontents. We are helping with all our force to counteract the machinations of the paid agitator who travels round the country, inflaming the ignorant by wild speeches, and gross misrepresentation of facts. It is not an easy task for the two Governments I have mentioned, but they must go into the fray with clean hearts and clean hands, and take care that the prominent positions are given to the men who can best fill them, irrespective of family or party claims, or any hole- and-corner methods like that. Don’t think this an unwise message to come from our side, mother. I’m giving it under direct guidance as usual, because the great Master Christ was a social reformer Himself once, you know, but He wasn’t one-sided like so many of the so-called champions of the people now. He demanded equality, that is to say, fair play on both sides. It is all so important, mother, because these different conditions for the physical body will have an extraordinary influence on the spiritual part of the ego. For one thing they’ll have more time, and more opportunity; it’s going to be a wonderfully interesting period on the earth, these next few years. And we are all watching it with the keenest interest and enjoyment. The Professor, of course, is wild with excitement over the possibility of development in progressive science, and so are all his friends. My teacher, Frank of Oxford, and his particular

lot, are more interested in the attitude of the Church on the earth. As for me and my special friends, it all interests us so much that we seem to enjoy the whole lot! Much of what the Professor talks about, puzzles me a good deal still, but he lets me ask him questions, and so I get to know a lot in that way. My special hope, though, mother, is to get all mothers to believe in the continuance of the life and individuality of their sons over here. I'm keener on that than on anything else, and in that you can help an awful lot, by the way you have taken my passing. Don't let any mother miss a chance of hearing about me if you can help it, not from any feeling of conceit about myself, mother, but simply because you can give it to them firsthand, and what applies to me applies to all people - in the main - there are differences as you know, but all the necessary points are the same. I'm awfully happy here, mother, and want you to know it."

("Thank God for it, my little son Tiny.")

"I haven't the least scrap of regret for my earth life now, although I love to hear about you, and Molly, and Jack. It is just as if I had had a curious dream, and woke up to find myself back in my real home. It is difficult to explain, mother, but nothing would make me come back in the old way. Not for anything would I put on my clumsy, heavy physical body again. When you come over, and Jack, I shall be so sublimely happy I shan't know what to do with myself, but remember, mother, it won't be for a very long time yet, as you count time.... Remember, mother, I'm just as happy as I can possibly be. Now I must go. Tiny, rest now."

DECEMBER 22nd

"All honour be to those champions of right who are not ashamed to confess the truth of their opinions. Many have suffered for them in the past, and we know that there will be suffering again. Nothing that was fine and uplifting to the real ego, the immortal spirit, has ever been gained except by suffering in the physical body, in some form or other. So do not let those people who are so thankfully letting the light of further revelation stream into their souls, be discouraged by the apparent failure of their attempts to make other folk accept what has brought them so much comfort. Let it alone. You can't tell how much you may have influenced even those very people who affect to despise your methods of looking on death and the future life. Always remember, too, that generations of well-meant, though untrue, teaching has sunk very deeply into the characters of people, and it is hard for those to deny, all that they have been taught to consider very important indeed. I used that word 'deny,' mother (although it is incorrect really, because very little of the new teaching is a direct contradiction of the old as regards facts, it's only a denial of the orthodox explanation of those facts), because that is what the public will say about my book of messages, that it is a denial of Christianity, and they'll use that expression for all it is worth. It is not a fair or correct criticism, but that is what will happen - at first. Don't let it worry you, mother, in the very least; let those critics blow off as much steam as they can, and do you carry on and refuse to be drawn into any controversial

arguments. Give out the book to the world. There is a good deal of fear behind critics of that sort, you know, and ignorance as well, so be very gentle with those people, and whatever you do, refrain from allowing yourself the least little feeling of superiority; you'll ruin yourself as a worker for the Master Christ, unless you keep yourself humble as He was humble in His earthly life, as we knew it in the pages of the Christian Bible

“And I want to say a word about Christmas, mother. Do you know it is a gloriously happy time with us, because it was the birthday of the great worker, Jesus of Nazareth, and the commencement of His training as a house or vehicle for that Mighty Spirit, the Christ of our Universe.

“You know, mother, they tell me here that the angels, who are a band of highly developed spirits, did sing on that first Christmas night, and that those men in the fields saw them, and heard them, with their clairvoyant and clairaudient vision. All the great spirits here rejoiced then, because they knew, that once more, the earth was to have her evolution speeded up by another manifestation of the Almighty God, within a very few years from the birth of that little Hebrew boy. I thought you would like to know that, mother, and remember we shall be singing like anything on Christmas Day, and lots and lots of us will be with our people in our homes, and at church with them. Perhaps next year you'll be a clairvoyant, mother, and then you'll know for yourself that I am really with you.”

(“I know you are, darling; I don't doubt for one minute.”)

“No, I know you don't doubt, mother, but it would be jollier for you if you really did see me and my grin, wouldn't it?”

(“Yes, rather.”)

“Well, you will, mother, right enough, but your development in that direction is being kept back a bit until your physical body is perfectly strong again, so don't worry because the power hasn't come yet. There are all sorts of changes coming in your life soon, mother, and you'll be considerably happier than you ever have been before. Now I must go. My love, mother. Tiny, rest now.”

DECEMBER 23rd

(“Are you here, Tiny darling?”)

“Yes, mother, just by your chair. You would laugh if you could see me! I'm wearing my old uniform, and my manner of standing is 'at attention.' It's only my joke, mother, just to make you laugh! You looked up then to try and see me, didn't you? Well, never mind, I'm here and you know it.

“People must be prepared to give up a good deal that they cherished, and to make all kinds of sacrifices for the good of humanity. The social evils cannot be done away with, and a better order of things instituted and carried on without the co-operation of all. That will mean self-denial, mother, to a very considerable extent for the large

proportion of the people, and it will touch everyone more or less. They must all be prepared to accept it as work for the Master, and pray for the clearer vision which will enable them to see the high purpose and plan, underlying what may seem to point to undue pampering, and favouritism of certain classes. That spirit, and that alone, will save this country from descending into the abyss of anarchy that now saturates Russia, and, to a certain extent, the Central Powers. Reformation there must be, but it need not spell revolution. There is a big example in front of the English race of the evils that followed undue license on the part of the undeveloped and uneducated members of the nation. That came about through ignorance and the old fault - greed of gain. There must be authority, controlled by brain power, and not by armed force. What I'm leading up to, mother, is the necessity for that Brotherhood which the Master Christ so much desires for this very special part of the Universe. He knows what infinite capacity for good exists in the two English-speaking races, and He looks to them to set the example of real fraternity, and not the make-believe stuff that passes for such, in the countries I have mentioned. There it has been dominated and spoiled by the evil powers - all that was good and noble in the efforts of a few of the really enlightened leaders, has been lost and trampled in the mud. The world will be a glorious dwelling-place in the future, mother, even though hampered by physical conditions, but the making of it will be a mighty tough job. Let the people hold ever before them the example of the Master's life on earth; not an impossible ideal at all - within the reach of everyone. His advice was perfectly practical, if people would only follow it out; you could really put it into two words, mother: 'fair dealing'; that covers the whole ground, everything springs from that. At present the few have been trying to obtain it for the many. Let all strive to obtain it for all. Now I must go.

My love, mother. Tiny, rest now."

DECEMBER 24th

"Much more remains to be told to people of the straight and narrow way that leads direct to the Great God of all the worlds, and I think on this night, Christmas Eve, I can get something through to you. Help me all you can, will you please, mother; there is so much I want to say. The manner of approaching the Great Ruler of the Universe varies very much with different egos, and all the differences can really be traced to the influences of past lives. It is the fundamental difference between an advanced and backward ego, that the former has very little fear, if any at all, in his attitude towards God. Fear always means false motives and want of love. As the ego advances and gains in spiritual love and strength, fear leaves him, until at the last he dares to stand before God, content to leave himself to the judgment of the Holiest of Holy Beings in perfect confidence. Many men have tried to formulate an idea of God; they have not succeeded very much; and my message is to tell them not to waste time in trying, because they cannot even faintly understand until they come over here. One thing they can do, and that is to remember that the Pattern has been given

them of what the nature of the great Deity consists, in the life that was lived by the great Master Christ on the earth, as a Teacher.

“Different conceptions of God have resulted in many different ways of approach to Him, guided always by the priesthood of the times. Many of the ways meant hideous ceremonies, and bloodcurdling sacrifices. These still exist, because the most degraded heathen in their terrible worship, are approaching God, you know, mother, although many of the orthodox priests would deny it. Some have sought to reach Him by severe treatment of the physical body, some by lifelong seclusion from the world, some by offerings of much money and many gifts. Well, none of them really reached the narrow way, because the real love was wanting, and the real sacrifice. None of those people who followed the courses I have described, could have been looked upon as really loving God. Love doesn't try to propitiate, mother; love simply does all it can for someone else without thinking of any reward, and without any fear. Sacrifice and love; both must be pure as the hearts of little children, not clouded by spiritual pride, not marred by material fear. Simply as a little child turns to his mother for comfort, knowing she will understand and not fail him, should be the attitude of the soul who realises the strait way of access to God. Other ways reach Him in time, but after endless suffering and repairing of mistakes. The child's attitude is what I want to press home, mother, because the world has a Child very much in its thoughts to-night. Although a mistaken idea has grown up round that particular Child, yet the beautiful story, and the lessons it teaches, are a great help to many people on the earth. Many of the world's great teachers have the same story woven round them, and the lesson it teaches is the same one - the sacredness of Childhood and Motherhood. The way of the Cross, the path to the Almighty God begins at birth, the physical birth of every ego; and the way is very long sometimes, mother, very dark sometimes, very rough going, dangers and temptations on all sides. But, mother, it's so tremendously worth it all! Nothing can compare with the life to which it leads, nothing can describe the beauty, and the love, and the knowledge that are waiting for every ego, just over the hill, mother. Out of sight, yes, perhaps, but not necessarily so. And there are beacons along the path, mother, examples of those who trod the path before us, guides to shew us the pitfalls, guardians to strengthen every upward effort. The soul is not left alone, mother, and at the last, what remains? Welcome from myriads of those other souls, who trod the same flinty hard road, whose feet were torn and bleeding with the same stones, whose hearts were lacerated with the same sharp thorns. This is not meant to be a mournful message, but to put people in mind that the pilgrimage of life begins with the first breath the ego draws in its physical body. The great Master Jesus began his life-work when he was born in that stable, mother, as the story goes in the Christian Bible, and it was not ended till he had completed the sum of self-sacrifice, in the death on Calvary. From cradle to cross - from cross to crown. Now I must go, mother. My love to you, and be sure you are happy to-morrow; I shall go down to chapel with you and do all I can to make you realise I'm there. Tiny, rest now.”

## DECEMBER 25th

“Peace on earth,’ mother, that is the message, and it comes straight from the Master with all His overflowing love and pity for the aching hearts in the midst of peace. Do not let them be over- troubled. From the agony of their sorrow, springs the wonderful growth of a new Tree of Life, planted in another Garden of Eden, and watered by the tears of thousands; still, for all that, peace, mother, with you and with us. How we are rejoicing to-day, and we are sending great shafts of spiritual light and joy down into your world. ‘The strife is o’er,’ mother, the evil is vanquished, the great cycle of this evolution turns once more to its upward arc, and all creation shares in its progress. The song of the angels, ‘Glory to God,’ may well be sung by the egos now in the flesh. The victory won by the Allies, would never have been gained without help from this side; spiritual force met material strength, and there was utter destruction of the Black Forces. Let people remember these last four years, mother, all their days; let them never be forgotten; let them understand the necessity for the suffering, and the triumph of the sacrifice. Let them not fail to keep the ideals for which we died, and do not let the earthly triumph blind them to the spiritual goal, for which that triumph was won. Right up to the highest heaven there is great joy to-day, mother. Bruno and the higher spirits, are full of the thankfulness that men feel when having set themselves to some mighty and overwhelming task, they find themselves at the end making the task a most complete success. It was a stupendous task for the spirit world, because you know the battle was fought out here first. ‘Glory to God,’ mother, is the message, ‘and on the earth good will.’ Remember.

My love to you. Tiny, rest now.”

## DECEMBER 27th

“Blessing and honour to the Great God, mother, who worked His mighty purpose through the Master Christ in the body of Jesus, son of Mary and Joseph, whose birth the world is commemorating now. Signs and wonders appeared in the sky then; the same will be constantly appearing now, telling of the second coming of the greatest of the world’s teachers. Not many people really believed in the Second Advent, as the Church phrases it, before the War, mother, though a certain number held the appalling doctrine of a coming as described in Luther’s hymn, which we always used to sing at school at the very top of our voices! But to the majority it was a far-away idea, not to be taken seriously by thinking people until the War. Just think what a change has come over the earth in four short years as regards the outlook in the future, here and with you. Men no longer shun the subject; it is no longer considered ‘bad form’ to mention the Master, or His work. That is most significant, especially in England, where people shut themselves up from discussion of things sacred, very much more than a Frenchman or an Italian. It’s a step forward, all in preparation for the gospel of Peace. When that comes...it will bring with it the realisation of what peace means, and at what cost it has been purchased. Lives of men, lives of women,

lives of little children, innocent victims of brutal treachery, sacred buildings defiled, misery untold, honour, and duty, and suffering, and sacrifice, poured out like water, for the good of the future generations. Is it all to be wasted, all to go for nothing, all to have been in vain? See to it, you people on the earth who are left to benefit by their efforts, that you do not fail them. Take warning by the manner of revolution on the Continent; no peace there, just more hideous slaughter. Be firm, be just, and mercy will follow. Any weakness now, any pandering to false sentimentality and a tenderness, which should be called cowardice, means untold horror to the sons and grandsons of the very men who died to save them from that horror. Much depends on the Anglo-Saxon race - almost all the authority and responsibility is with them. Help is being poured into their leaders from this side, and we think some of them are conscious of it. It is so important, mother, that though this message may be rather like a repetition of a former one, it must be given. The point of it is the help from this side, the co-operation of our world with yours. Brains are not worth much without that distinctive fineness of judgment which sees the final issue, and is anxious to work for that, even though it might mean a lesser advantage for the moment.

“Now, mother, once more let me tell you that the Master Christ will most surely appear to people on the earth, and will make His presence felt in many ways, not only to the theologians, perhaps not to many of them, but to the faithful, humble servant, who for long years has been striving to live the life the Master did; the humble, loving, self-denying life, that leads to the summit of man’s humanity. Now I must go.

My love, mother. Tiny, rest now.”

THE END